



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

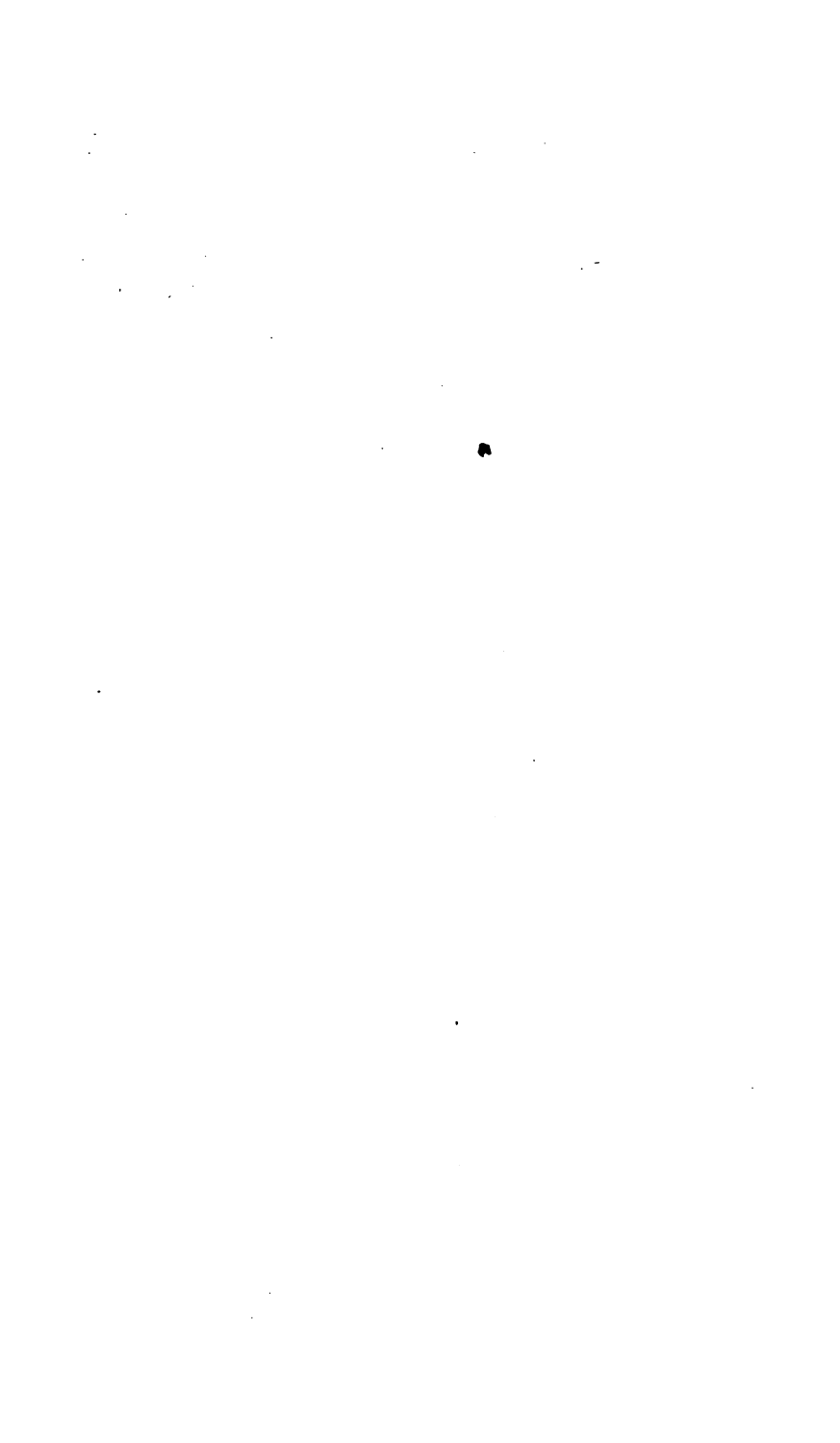




600083296Y

算







*



A
GRAMMAR
OF THE
WELSH LANGUAGE,

BASED ON THE MOST APPROVED SYSTEMS;

WITH COPIOUS EXAMPLES

FROM SOME OF THE MOST CORRECT WELSH WRITERS.

BY
THE REV. THOMAS ROWLAND,
CURATE OF LLANDRINDOD,
BALA.



HOLYWELL,
W. MORRIS, 'CYMRO' AND 'EGLWYSYDD' OFFICE :
HUGHES AND BUTLER, ST. MARTIN'S-LE-GRAND,
LONDON.
1853.

302.c.89.

BAXTER, PRINTER, OXFORD.

PREFACE.

THIS Work was undertaken with the view of facilitating the study of the Welsh Language, and of lessening the difficulties that have been wholly passed over in silence by preceding grammarians. It is sometimes asked, whether it is possible to lay down rules that would guide a stranger in acquiring a grammatical and accurate knowledge of the Welsh Language; and some are inclined to answer in the negative. But surely those who have studied the language carefully will feel no hesitation in stating, that it is possible to gain as perfect a knowledge of the Welsh as of any other tongue. It is admitted, that its idioms and peculiarities are many; but still they are capable of explanation, and reducible to very plain and definite rules.

This Grammar, or rather this attempt to lay down a foundation of a Grammar of the Welsh language, was commenced about three years ago; and it has been continued, as other employments afforded opportunities, from that time up to the present. But those who are acquainted with the state and contents of our existing Grammars will, I doubt not, at once confess, that a

longer period of uninterrupted study is necessary to bring out a work that could pretend to the accuracy and completeness of the Latin and Greek Grammars.

In its preparation, such Welsh Grammars were consulted as were likely to render the greatest aid, as those of *Dr. Davies* and *Dr. W. O. Pughe*; but in "Syntax," the greatest amount of assistance was obtained from the very learned and accurate Essay of the *Rev. T. J. Hughes*, who at the *Aberffraw Eisteddfod* obtained the Prize offered by the *Lord Bishop of St. David's*, and the *Rev. Charles Williams of Holyhead*. This Essay, independently of its intrinsic worth, merits great praise, as being the first regular attempt to explain the principles of Welsh Syntax. In giving definitions of points belonging to universal Grammar, and in exhibiting correspondence of idiom between the Welsh and the Latin and Greek languages, much help was also derived from *Zumpt*, *Key*, *Arnold*, *Matthiæ*, and *Kühner*.

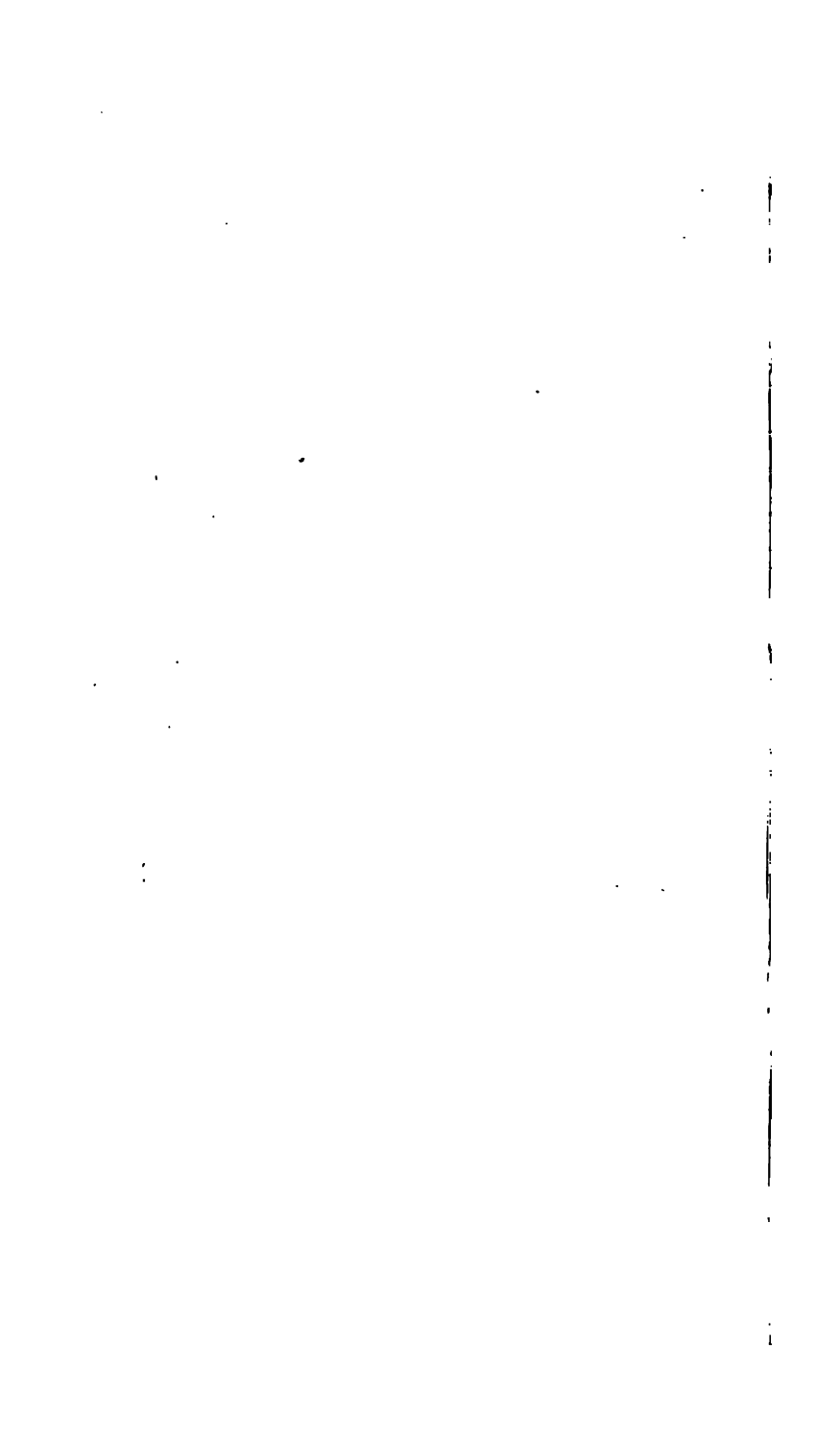
All will allow, that a Welsh Grammar, superior to any of those that have been hitherto published, is very much needed; but whether the present Work surpasses its predecessors, must be determined by the reader. It will be seen, there is no doubt, that many deficiencies exist in this production, and that its short-comings are numerous. However, should a second edition be called for, it is hoped that these deficiencies may be amended, mistakes rectified, and many observations added which have been now omitted, owing partly to want of *time*, and partly to want of *knowledge*. And with this view it

would be deemed a kindness if Welsh critics would, either publicly or privately, favour me with hints, emendations, and remarks, so that I may be enabled to send forth a second edition more systematic, more perfect, and more complete.

It is my duty to state, that I am under very great obligations to the *Rev. Thomas Briscoe, B.D. Vice-Principal and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford*, for the kind assistance he has rendered me, both in looking over the Work before it was sent to the Printer, and in correcting the proof-sheets while passing through the Press. Were it not for him, and the *Rev. William Briscoe, M.A. Fellow of Jesus College*, it is doubtful whether the book would ever have been published: and if the reader derives any benefit from the Grammar, he, no doubt, will join with me in acknowledging our gratitude to these two Gentlemen.

THOMAS ROWLAND.

BALA, Aug. 8, 1853.



CONTENTS.

PART I.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

	Page
The Alphabet and pronunciation of the letters. .	1
Classification of the letters.	3
Inflection of vowels.	5
Diphthongs and Triphthongs.	5
Mutations of Consonants.	6
Syntactical mutations.	7
Etymological mutations.	8
Accentuation of words.	9
Accent on the penult.	9
Accent on the ultima.	10
Accent on the antepenult.	12
Syllables and words.	12
Primitive words.	12
Compound words.	13
Derivative words.	13
Spelling.	13
Words to be spelt according to their etymology. .	14
The prefixes <i>an, di; cy, cym, cyn, cys; as, es, ys, &c.</i>	15
The use of the aspirate <i>h</i>	17
The use of the preposition <i>yn</i>	18
Words of doubtful origin.	18
Words cognate with those of other languages. .	18

PART II.

ETYMOLOGY.

Classification of words.	19
Substantives (or nouns).	19
Terminations of nouns.	19
Number of nouns.	20
Formation of the plural.	20
Formation of the singular from the plural.	24
Gender of nouns.	24
Cases of nouns.	28
Adjectives.	28
Terminations of adjectives.	29
Gender of adjectives.	29
Formed (<i>a</i>) by inflection of vowels.	29
(<i>b</i>) by mutation of consonants.	30
Number of adjectives.	30
Degrees of comparison.	32
Numerals.	34
Personal pronouns.	36
Reflexive pronouns.	37
Reciprocal pronouns.	38
Demonstrative pronouns.	38
Relative pronouns.	39
Interrogative pronouns.	40
Possessive pronouns.	40
Indefinite pronouns.	41
Verbs.	42
Formation of the moods.	42
Infinitive mood.	43
Infinitive endings.	43
Finite moods.	43
Definition of the moods.	45
Tenses of verbs.	46
Present tense.	46
Imperfect.	47
Perfect.	47

CONTENTS.

ix

Pluperfect.	47
Future.	47
Future perfect.	47
Progressive state.	48
Participles.	48
Conjugation of the verb <i>Bod</i>	49
Compound verbs of <i>Bod</i>	52
Auxiliary verbs.	53
Conjugation of a regular verb.	54
Terminations of the inflected form.	54
DYSGU.	55
Active voice.	55
Participles.	59
Passive voice.	59
Participles.	64
Irregular verbs.	65
Myned.	65
Dyfod.	66
Gwneyd or gwneuthur.	68
Gwybod.	69
Adwaen.	70
Cael or caffael.	72
Chwerthin, clywed, rhoi, dywedyd, cymmeryd, ysgwyd, codi, dwyn, canu, gwanu.	73
Defective verbs.	74
Medd; eb; piau; hwde; moes; byw, and marw.	74
Y mae genyf, "I have."	75
The Article.	76
Adverbs.	76
Adverbs of quality.	77
of number.	78
of order.	78
of place.	78
of time.	79
of quantity.	79
of negation.	79
of affirmation.	79
of interrogation.	79

Adverbs of comparison.	80
Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.	80
Conjunctions.	80
Copulative; disjunctive; suppositive; concessive; causal; of motive or purpose; of effect or result; explanatory; temporal; comparative; adversative; illative.	81
Prepositions.	81
Simple prepositions.	82
Prepositions proper	82
Substantive prepositions.	83
Compound prepositions.	84
Compounds ending with a preposition.	84
Compounds ending with a substantive.	85
Pronominal prepositions.	86
Interjections.	88
Prefixes.	89
Affixes.	93
Noun terminations.	93
Abstract.	94
Agent.	94
Promiscuous.	95
Adjective terminations.	97-
Verb terminations. (see pp. 55, 59.)	

PART III.

SYNTAX.

The Article.	98
Article before proper names.	101
Nouns (or Substantives).	102
Apposition.	102
'In apposition.'	103
Nominative case	104
Possessive (or genitive) case.	104
Accusative (or objective) case.	107
Vocative case.	108
Adjectives.	108

CONTENTS.

xi

Agreement in Gender.	108
Agreement in Number.	109
Position.	109
Government.	110
Accusative after adjectives.	111
Numerals.	113
Cardinal.	113
Ordinal.	114
Personal pronouns.	115
Connected with verbs.	115
Auxiliary pronouns.	117
The pronoun <i>Hi</i> .	117
Connected with nouns.	117
Connected with prepositions.	117
Apposition and government.	118
<i>Fy hun</i> &c. myself.	118
Possessive pronouns.	118
<i>Mau</i> and <i>tau</i> .	119
<i>Eiddof, eiddot</i> , &c. mine, thine.	119
Government.	120
Demonstrative pronouns.	120
<i>Hyn, hyny</i> .	121
Indefinite pronouns.	121
Verbs.	124
Agreement.	124
Position.	126
Government.	128
Auxiliary affirmative particles before verbs.	130
Possessive pronouns before verbs.	130
Before Transitive verbs.	131
Before Intransitive and Passive verbs.	132
Infinitive Passive.	133
The verb <i>Bod</i> .	134
Difference between <i>sydd, mae, oes</i> , and <i>yw</i> .	134
<i>Sydd</i> .	134
<i>Mae</i> .	136
<i>Oes</i> .	137
<i>Yw</i> .	137

Agreement.	139
Apposition verbs.	140
‘ <i>Yn</i> apposition.’	141
Government and position of <i>yn</i> .	142
Omission of <i>yn</i> .	143
Infinitive mood.	144
Observation on “ <i>i</i> ” before the Infin.	145
Government of the Infinitive.	146
Participles.	146
The difference between <i>yn</i> , <i>gan</i> , and <i>dan</i> .	147
Adverbs.	148
Position.	148
Adverbs of negation.	149
Adverbs of comparison.	151
Adverbs of quality.	151
Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.	151
The auxiliary <i>a</i> .	152
The auxiliaries <i>y</i> , <i>yr</i> , <i>yd</i> , and <i>ydd</i> .	153
Conjunctions.	156
Prepositions.	157
<i>Mewn</i> and <i>yn</i>	158
Different functions of <i>yn</i> .	158
<i>A</i> (<i>ag</i>) and <i>gan</i> .	159
<i>At</i> and <i>i</i> .	159
<i>Erbyn</i> , <i>yn erbyn</i> , <i>i . . erbyn</i> .	159
<i>Cer</i> , <i>ger</i> ; <i>cerfydd</i> , <i>gerfydd</i> , &c.	159
<i>Tan</i> , <i>dan</i> ; <i>traus</i> , <i>draws</i> , &c.	160
Time and distance of place.	160
Compound prepositions.	160
<i>O</i> , <i>oddi</i> , <i>ar</i> , <i>oddi wrth</i> .	160
Compound prepositions ending with a substantive.	161
Pronominal prepositions.	161
Interjections.	162

CLAUSES.

Transitive clause.	162
Infinitive mood followed by its subject.	168

CONTENTS.

xiii

Infinitive with subject connected by 'o.'	164
Infinitive with subject governed by a preposition.	165
Passive voice.	165
<i>Y, yr, mai, and tau</i> with finite moods.	166
Cause clause.	167
Infin. mood followed by its subject.	168
Infin. with subject connected by 'o.'	168
Infin. with subject governed by the prep. 'i.'	168
Passive voice.	169
<i>Y, yr mai, and tau</i> with finite moods.	169
Explanatory cause clause.	170
Concessive clause.	170
Infin. followed by its subject.	171
Infin. with subject connected by 'o.'	171
Infin. with subject governed by the prep 'i.'	171
Passive voice.	171
<i>Y, yr, mai, and tau</i> with finite moods.	171
Time clause.	172
Construed with finite verbs.	172
Construed with finite or infinitive verbs.	172
Motive clause.	174
Subjunctive mood.	174
Infinitive mood.	174
Effect clause.	175
Interrogative clause.	176
Predicative questions.	176
Answers to predicative questions.	177
Nominal questions.	178
Wish clause.	179
Supposition and Inference clauses.	180
Fact supposition.	180
Contingent supposition.	180
Non-fact supposition.	182
Relative clause.	183
Agreement.	183
Position.	184
Omission of antecedent.	184
Omission of relative.	185
Possessive case.	185
Negative particles.	186

Absolute clause.	. . . . .	186
Apposition clause.	. . . . .	187
SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF THE INITIAL MUTATIONS.	. . . . .	187
<i>Middle</i> sound.	. . . . .	188
Nouns, adjectives, and pronouns.	. . . . .	188
Verbs.	. . . . .	190
Intervient phrase.	. . . . .	191
Prepositions.	. . . . .	191
Adverbs and conjunctions.	. . . . .	191
Interjections.	. . . . .	192
Governing words omitted.	. . . . .	193
<i>Nasal</i> sound.	. . . . .	193
<i>Aspirate</i> sound.	. . . . .	194
Vowels aspirated.	. . . . .	194
Questions proposed for the "Powis' Exhibition."	. . . . .	197
List of Subscribers.	. . . . .	199

EXPLANATION OF MARKS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

<i>Accus.</i> accusative.	<i>L.</i> Latin.
<i>Aff.</i> <i>affirm.</i> affirmative.	<i>M. mid.</i> middle.
<i>Asp.</i> aspirate.	<i>M. mas.</i> masculine.
<i>C. contr.</i> contracted.	<i>N.</i> neuter.
<i>Cf.</i> (=confer) compare.	<i>Nom.</i> nomination.
<i>Def.</i> definite.	<i>Pl.</i> plural.
<i>E. g.</i> (=exempli gratiâ) for ex- ample.	<i>Pr. pres.</i> present.
<i>Fr.</i> from.	<i>Pron.</i> pronoun.
<i>Fem.</i> feminine.	<i>Perf.</i> perfect.
<i>Fut.</i> future.	<i>Plup.</i> pluperfect.
<i>Gr.</i> Greek.	<i>Pers.</i> personal.
<i>I. e.</i> (=id est) that is.	<i>Prep.</i> preposition.
<i>Imper.</i> imperative.	<i>Q. V.</i> (quod vide) see it.
<i>Imperf.</i> imperfect.	<i>R.</i> root or radical.
<i>Impers.</i> impersonal.	<i>Rad.</i> radical.
<i>Indic.</i> indicative.	<i>S. sin. sing</i> singular.
<i>Indef.</i> indefinite.	<i>Subj.</i> subjunctive.
<i>Infin.</i> infinitive.	<i>§.</i> section.
<i>Interr.</i> interrogative.	= equal to.

WELSH GRAMMAR.

PART I.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

1. The Welsh Alphabet: *a, b, c, ch, chw, d, dd, e, f, ff, g, ng, ngh, h, i, l, ll, m, mh, n, nh, o, p, ph, rh, r, s, t, th, u, w, y.*

2. Pronunciation of the letters.

A is pronounced, when short, like *a* in *man, mat*; when long, like *a* in *far, psalm*.

B=*be*, as in English.

C=*ĉk*, like *k* in English. It is never soft like *c* in *city*.

Ch=*ĉx* (the *c* aspirated) like *χ* of the Greek properly pronounced, and *ch* in the Scottish *loch*.

Chw^{*}=*χoo*, has the same sound as *ch*, with that of *w* added to it.

D=*de*, like the English *d* in *deed, do*.

Dd=*ĉth* (soft) like *th* in *with, thee*: never like *th* in *thought*.

E=*a*, when short, like *e*, in *hen, met*; when long, like *a* in *cane, mare*.

F=*ĉv*, like the English *v*.

Ff=*ĉf*, like the English *f* in *fair, for*.

G=*ĉg*, like the English *g* in *get, dog*: never soft like *g* in *giant*.

Ng=*ĉng*, like *ng* of the English in *long, length*.

Ngh has the sound of *ng* with a very strong breathing.

H=*haitch* or *he*, has the same sound as *h* of the English in *horrid, hand*; but is never silent like *h* in *hour*.

I=*e*, when short, like *i* in *pin*; when long, like *ee* in *fleet*.

L=*ĉl*, like the English *l*.

* *Chw* is a radical letter, and, like *qu*, is always followed by a vowel: *chwaer, chwerthin*.

Ll=ëll, has no sound in English corresponding to it. The Spanish ll^b and the Italian gl are very like it.

M=ëm, as in English.

Mh has the sound of *m* with a very strong breathing.

N=ën, as in English.

Nh has the sound of *n* with a very strong breathing.

O=o, when short, like *o* in *not, got*; when long, similar to *o* in *bone, note*.

P=pe, as in English.

Ph=ëf, like the English *f* in *fair*, or *ph* in *philosopher*.

Rh like the Greek ρ; as in ῥῆμα.

R=ër, something like the English *r*.

S=ës, like *s* in *sin, same*: never like *s* in *praise, choose*.

T=te, like the English *t* in *to, fat*.

Th=ëth (hard) like *th* in *thin, thick*: never like *th* in *thou*.

U=ë, when short, like *i* in *this, live*, or *u* in *busy*; when long, similar to *e* in *me*.

W=oo, when short, like *oo* in *good*; when long, like *oo* in *boon*.

Y has two sounds. Its primary sound is like that of *u* in *fur, run*, or *e* in *her, stern*; its secondary sound is that of the Welsh *u*. Both sounds are exemplified in *myfyr* and *hyny*, or the English word *sundry*.

3. The secondary sound of *y* occurs

a. In monosyllables; as *llym, tyn, hyn*. But the following words are exceptions, *dy, dyd, dyt, fy, myn*, (by, in swearing,) *y, yd, ydd, ym, yn, yr*, and *ys*, which have the primary sound.

b. In the last syllable of words of more than one syllable; as *ysgrifenydd, erfyn*. [If a syllable is added, the primary sound is resumed; as *ysgrifenyddion, erfyniau*.]

c. When it is immediately preceded by *w*; as *gwynfyd, mwynhâu, bwyta*. But there are several exceptions to this, especially if the preceding *w* is short, or is preceded by another vowel; as *chwyrnu, chwysu, llewyrchu, tywyllu, awyddu, ewyllys*.

d. In the prefix *cyd* and sometimes in *cyn*: as *cydeistedd, cynoesodd*; and in adjectives and adverbs prefixed

^b "The aspirated ll of the Spaniards is very like the Welsh ll, and is most probably a relic of Celtic pronunciation." (*Johnes' Philologica. Proofs, &c.*)

to other words; as, *synfyfyrio*, *hyllidremio*, *cryfarfog*. These are by some written with a hyphen, *syn-fyfyrio*, *cryf-arfog*, which may be regarded as indicating that *y* in the prefixed word is to have the same sound as when the word stands unconnected.

4. In other circumstances this letter has its proper or primary sound; as, *cyntaf*, *syndod*, *cyfiawnder*. [But in *teyrnas*, and words derived from it, it has the secondary sound.]

5. Thus all the letters of the Welsh alphabet, except *y*, have only one sound respectively; and in all their combinations this sound is preserved without any change, or without its becoming quiescent. Such diphthongs as *ae*, *oe*, (e. g. *daeth*, *oen*,) are often pronounced as if written *au* and *ou*; but a correct reader will give them their proper sound. Therefore, as *Dr. Pughe* says, "the sounds of the letters must be considered as the perfect standard of the pronunciation of the Welsh language, and the criterion of correct speaking."

6. *J*, *k*, *q*, *v*, *x*, and *z*, occur in foreign names. Many writers, however, will not admit them into our language, but write all foreign words with our own characters. Thus, *Job*=*Iob*; *Ezekiel*=*Eseciel*; *Quintilian*=*Cwinctilian*; *Virgil*=*Fyrgil* (or *Fyrsil*); *Alexander*=*Alecsander*; *Zadoc*=*Sadoc*.

7. *Ch*, *dd*, *ff*, *ll*, *ng*, *ph*, *th*, &c. though double letters, represent but one simple sound.

8. "It is much to be regretted, that the Orthography of the Welsh language, although really so scientific, and presenting so certain a clue to its orthoëpy, that a child, if correctly directed, can in a very brief time correctly enounce the sounds suggested by the written characters, should have been based upon so clumsy a principle as the unmeaning reduplication of consonants, which presents to the eye of the uninitiated a barbarous aggregation of unpronounceable characters. The form is as bad as can be, but the intended object has been fully secured by the adoption of this system, offensive even to the Welshman's eye, and utterly repugnant to the feelings of all foreigners." Several attempts have been made from the time of *Dr. John David Rhys*, who lived some three hundred years ago, to that of *Dr. William Owen Pughe*, to render the established Orthography more simple, and in accordance with the genius and peculiarities of the language; but all their labours have proved in vain.

CLASSIFICATION OF THE LETTERS.

9. Letters are divided into *vowels* and *consonants*.

^c *Archdeacon Williams*.

10. Seven of the letters are vowels: *a, e, i, o, u, w, y*: *a, e, o, w, y*, are mutable: *i, u*, immutable.

11. Consonants are divided into *radical* (or *initial*); and *derivative* (or *non-initial*).

12. The radical consonants are those which begin words in their original state. The derivative consonants are such as are mutations of some of the radical, and which cannot stand at the head of any Welsh words in their original state. They are always influenced by some preceding word; and when this word is taken away, they re-assume their radical form. Thus, words must be looked for in the Dictionary either under the *vowels* or the *radical consonants*^d.

13. The radical consonants are again divided into *immutable* and *mutable*.

14. The immutables are five in number: *chw, ff, h, n, s*. These never undergo any change whatever, but remain steady and immoveable under all circumstances.

15. The mutables are nine: *c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh*. These are changed into other letters of the same organ, when preceded by certain governing words. *C, p, t*, undergo *three* changes; *g, b, d*, *two*; and *ll, m, rh*, *one*.

16. The derivative consonants are *b, ch, d, dd, f, g, ng, ngh, l, m, mh, n, nh, ph, r*, and *th*, which are modifications of the *mutable* consonants.

(a) The letters *b, d, g, m, n*, are both *radical*, and the *derivatives* of *p, t, c, b, d*. They are radical in

<i>Bya.</i>	<i>Gwraig.</i>	<i>Nain.</i>
<i>Dafad.</i>	<i>Modryb.</i>	

But they are modifications of *p, t, c, b, d*, in

<i>Dy ben</i> (rad. pen.)	<i>Dy gar</i> (rad. car.)	<i>Fy nafad</i> (rad. dafad.)
<i>Dy dad</i> (rad. tad.)	<i>Fy mys</i> (rad. bys.)	

17. Consonants are also divided according to the organs of speech chiefly employed in uttering them.

a. *B, f, ff, m, mh, p, ph*, are *labials*.

β. *D, dd, n, nh, t, th, s*, *linguals* (or *dentals*.)

γ. *C, ch, chw, g, ng, ngh, h*, *gutturals*.

δ. *Ll, l, rh, r*, *palatals*.

^d But the words *fal, fel, felly, fe, fo, fy*, which are either contractions or mutations of words beginning with vowels or radical consonants, are to be looked for under *f*.

Such words as *lefain, lamp, lump, lôn*, which are not originally Welsh, must be looked for under *l*.

INFLECTIONS OF VOWELS.

18. The vowels, which admit of being changed into other vowels, are *a, e, o, w, y*. They are changed (*a*) to distinguish number; as *dafad*, sheep, pl. *defaid*; (*b*) to distinguish gender; as *llwm*, bare, fem. *llom*; (*c*) to form the 3d pers. sing. fut. of verbs; as *safaf*, I will stand, 3d pers. *saiſf*, he will stand; (*d*) to render words more euphonious; as *dwfr*, water, *dyfroedd*.

A	{	is changed into	<i>ai</i> ; as <i>dafad</i> , <i>a</i> sheep, <i>defaid</i> , <i>sheep</i> .
			<i>e</i> ; as <i>glan</i> , <i>clean</i> , <i>glendid</i> , <i>cleanliness</i> .
			<i>ei</i> ; as <i>bardd</i> , <i>a</i> bard, <i>beirdd</i> , <i>bards</i> .
E	{	into	<i>y</i> ; as <i>cadarn</i> , <i>strong</i> , <i>cedyrn</i> , <i>strong</i> . (pl.)
			<i>i</i> ; as <i>draen</i> , <i>thorn</i> , <i>drain</i> , <i>thorns</i> .
			<i>u</i> ; as <i>gwnaeth</i> , <i>he did</i> , <i>gwnethym</i> , <i>I did</i> .
O	{	into	<i>y</i> ; as <i>pabell</i> , <i>tent</i> , <i>pebyll</i> , <i>tents</i> .
			<i>y</i> ; as <i>porth</i> , <i>porch</i> , <i>pyrth</i> , <i>porches</i> .
			<i>o</i> ; as <i>trwm</i> , <i>heavy</i> , <i>trwm</i> , <i>heavy</i> (fem.)
W	{	into	<i>y</i> ; as <i>pwn</i> , <i>pack</i> , <i>pynau</i> , <i>packs</i> .
			<i>e</i> ; as <i>brych</i> , <i>speckled</i> , <i>brech</i> , <i>speckled</i> (fem.)

DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS.

19. A diphthong is the union of two vowels in the same syllable. The following is a list of the diphthongs, that occur in Welsh words, with instances to exemplify them.

ae	saeth.	ia	iach.	aw	buwch
ai	gair	ie	iechyd	wa	gwallt.
au	haul.	io	Ior.	we	gwedd.
aw	llaw.	iw	lliw.	wi	gwin.
ei	lleidr.	iy	iyrchod	wo	gwobr.
eu	lleuad.	oe	oen.	wu	gwall.
ew	llew.	oi	troi.	wy	gwyn
ey	teyrn.	ow	trowch.	yw	byw.

20. A triphthong is the union of three vowels in one syllable. The following occur in Welsh words.

iae	gwybyddiaeth.	wae	chwaer.
iai	iaith.	wai	gwaith.
iau	doniau.	wau	gwaudd.
iaw	iawn.	waw	gwawr.
iei	ieithoedd.	wei	gweinydd.
ieu	ieuan.	wew	gweunydd.
iew	iewan.	wew	gwew.
ioe	erioed.	wey	gweywyr
iyw	soniwyd.	wiw.	gwiw.
		wyw	gwyw.

21. **Inflections.** *Aw* is very frequently changed into *o*; as,

mawl,	moli.	prawf,	profi.	caws,	coeyn.
brawd,	brodyr.	tlawd,	tlodion.	llawr,	lloriau.

Ae is changed into *ei* and *eu*; as *maen*, *meini*; *gwnaeth*, *gwnauthym*.

Oe in a few instances is changed into *wy* and *ae*; as *croen*, *crwyn*; *oen*, *wyn*; *troed*, *traed*.

Ai and *ei* are in a few instances changed into *a*; as *gwraig*, *gwragedd*; *lleidr*, *lladron*; *neidr*, *nadroedd*.

22. In a triphthong all the vowels are not inflected; for example, in *uniawn*, *unionder*, *aw* only is changed. So *iaith*, *ieithydd*; *gwaith*, *gweithiwr*, &c.

MUTATIONS OF CONSONANTS.

23. "The principle of *literal mutation*, as a regular system, is peculiar to the Welsh; though the effect of such an aptitude in some of the letters to change their sounds, is seen to pervade all languages. But it regulates some of the primary forms of construction in this tongue, as well with respect to syntax as to the composition of words*."

24. The mutable consonants, or the consonants capable of assuming other forms or modifications, are the following: *C, P, T, G, B, D, Ll, M. Rh*. These are divided into three *classes*, or, as *Dr. Davies* calls them, *declensions*, with three letters in each.

25. The *first class* comprises, *c, p, t*: the *second*, *g, b, d*: the *third*, *ll, m, rh*.

26. When these letters are in their original or unchanged forms, they are said to be in the *radical* sound; but when they are changed into other letters, owing to the influence that the word or syllable, which *immediately precedes*, has over them, they are said to be in the *middle* (or *soft*), the *nasal*, or the *aspirate* sound. Take, for instance, the word *câr*, a friend.

Rad.	Mid.	Nasal.	Asp.
Câr.	dy gâr.	fy nghâr.	ei châr.

27. These various alterations in the form of the nine

* *Dr. Pughe's Gram. p. 13.*

mutables take place. (1) *In syntax*, which may be called *syntactical mutation*; (2) *In the composition of words*, which may be called *etymological mutation*.

28. *Syntactical mutation*. To treat of the changes, which consonants undergo in Syntax, belongs properly to that division of Grammar; but as this subject is one of peculiar importance, and must frequently be mentioned before we come to treat of Syntax, it is expedient to acquaint the student with its leading principles as early as possible. Persons, who are not acquainted with the Welsh language from their infancy, always complain that they are puzzled with the continual changes of the consonants. This may appear to them a greater difficulty, inasmuch as the languages, with which they may be conversant, have nothing analogous. This constitutes the most peculiar characteristic of the British tongue; and it is said that very few languages have any thing in common with it. "In the changes and variations of these mutables lies a great part of the art and mystery of this very peculiar tongue, the most curious, perhaps, and the most delicate for its structure of any language in the world^f." It must not be supposed, however, that this difficulty is insurmountable: the mutations are made systematically, and they are all reducible to definite rules, which will be found interspersed throughout the present work, with a synopsis of the whole at the end.

29. The changes are made for two purposes; *first*, "to distinguish words, to shew their various relations and connections, and to fix and ascertain their proper meanings^g;" *secondly*, "to distinguish the sound, to ease the pronunciation, and to render it smooth and harmonious^h."

30. This principle is not confined to those parts of speech denominated "declinable," as the term "declension," used by *Dr. Davies*, would lead the classical scholar to suppose; but it extends also to some of those, which by Grammarians are termed "indeclinable." Thus the conjunction *pan*, when preceded by *a*, takes the aspirate sound. '*A phan ddaeth efe*.'

31. The following table exhibits the changes of which each letter is susceptible.

^f *Dr. T. Llewelyn's Remarks &c.* p. 58.

^g *Ib.* p. 67.

^h *Ib.* p. 66.

Observation. The pronouns, which stand at the head of the table, govern the sounds over which they are respectively placed. They will aid a person well acquainted with the language to find out the names of the different sounds; but are of no assistance to a stranger, whose ear does not immediately direct him to ascertain the vocal mutations.

	<i>Radical.</i> <i>Eu, their</i>	<i>Middle.</i> <i>Dy, thy</i>	<i>Nasal.</i> <i>Fy, my</i>	<i>Aspirate.</i> <i>Ei, her</i>
1st Class. } C	Câr, <i>a friend</i>	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
} P	Pen, <i>a head</i>	Ben	Mhen	Phen
} T	Tâd, <i>a father</i>	Dâd	Nhâd	Thâd
2d Class. } G	Gwr, <i>a man</i>	—wr ¹	Ngwr	
} B	Bara, <i>bread</i>	Fara	Mara	
} D	Duw, <i>God</i>	Dduw	Nuw	
3d Class. } Ll	Llaw, <i>a hand</i>	Llaw		
} M	Mam, <i>a mother</i>	Fam		
} Rh	Rhaw, <i>a spade</i>	Raw		

32. Thus the *first class* is susceptible of the three changes; the *middle*, *nasal*, and *aspirate*. The *second class* of two; the *middle* and *nasal*. The *third class* of one only; the *middle*.

33. The radical sound supplies the aspirate of the *second class*, and the nasal and aspirate of the *third*^k. (Ei gwr: fy llaw; ei llaw.)

34. **Etymological mutation.** The mutable consonants are susceptible of changes in composition of words. With few exceptions, their mutations are the same as those in syntax, and the principle by which they are changed into other letters is the same. Thus, in the word *anfuddiol*, compounded of *an* and *buddiol*; *b* is changed into *f*, because it is governed by the preceding particle *an*.

(a) Sometimes the last letter of the preceding syllable is influenced by the following syllable.

The letters *g*, *b*, *d*, are sometimes changed into *c*, *p*, *t*, if a syllable follows; as,

Tebyg, tebycach. Gwlyb, gwlypach. Tlawd, tlotach.

P and *t* are sometimes respectively changed into *m* and *n*: as

Pump, pummed. Tym^p, tymmor.

Dant, dannedd. Meddiant^t, meddiannau.

¹ Omission of the initial letter is the sign of the middle sound of *G*.

^k The words *ni*, *na*, and *ni* form an exception. (See *Synoptical view*, at the end.)

(b) The letter *ff* occurs in some words where we should expect *f*; as

Coffhâu (cof-hâu.) Cyffwrdd (cy-hwrdd.)

Cyffyllog (cy-byl.) Cyffelyb (cy-mal.)

35. Letters are changed in the composition of words merely for the sake of euphony: annysgedig for andysgedig; diben for dipen. [The same principle extends to a certain degree in Greek and Latin: συλλαβάνω for συναμβάνω; συμπάσχω for συνπάσχω; colligo for conligo; accipio for adcipio.]

36. In forming compound words, the preceding component part, whether a mere prefix or a more substantial word, requires that the following syllable should be in the *middle* sound.

Amgylchu, fr. am-cylchu.

Argraff, fr. ar-craff.

Gorseddfainc, fr. gorsedd-mainc.

Brenindy, fr. brenin-ty.

37. The above is the rule; but when the preceding syllable is nothing more than a common prefix, the rule is very frequently violated. The most irregular prefixes are *a*, *an*, *cy*, *gor*, *tra*, and *as*, *es*, *ys*, with their compounds, *cys*, *dis*, *dys*, &c. The following observations are added to show the *general tendency* of their government.

38. *A* has a tendency to govern the radical and the aspirate. Abwyd (bwyd). Agwedd (gwedd). Athrist (trist).

39. *An* governs the nasal of *c*, *p*, *t*, *d*; the middle and the nasal of *g*, *b*; the middle and the radical of *ll*, *rh*; the middle of *m*. A'nghyfiawn (cyfiawn). A'ngradd (gradd). Anweddus (gweddus). Aurad (rhad). Anrheg (rheg). Anfwyn (mwyn).

40. *Cy* governs the nasal of *c* and *g*: it has a tendency to govern the middle of the labials and dentals. Cynghor (côr). Cyngwystl (gwystl). Cyfoli (moli).

41. *Gor* governs *c*, *p*, *t*, in the middle and the aspirate; *ll* and *rh* in the middle and the radical; the other mutables in the middle. Gorboenus (poenus). Gorphen (pen). Gorlog (llog). Gorllewin (llewin). Gorflin (blin).

42. *Tra* is followed by the aspirate of *c*, *p*, *t*: by the radical of the other letters. Trachefn (cefn). Traphlith (plith).

As, *es*, *ys*, with their compounds. (see §. 79, 80, 81.)

THE ACCENTUATION OF WORDS.

43. Accent on the penult. *Words of two syllables*

and upwards are accentuated on the penult; that is, on the last syllable but one.

44. Accordingly when the word is lengthened by a syllable or syllables suffixed, the accent moves towards the end. Thus,

Perch'en, a <i>possessor</i>	Accent on the first syllable.
Perchénog	second syll.
Perchenog'aeth	third syll.
Perchenogaeth'au	fourth syll.

This rule is subject to some exceptions.

45. Accent on the ultima. Infinitive verbs ending with the suffix *háu*¹ (or *áu*), and such of the finite tenses of the same verbs as have a monosyllable for their termination, are accented on the last syllable; as,

Coffháu; *glanháu*; *bywháu*; *cryfháu*.
Glanhaf'; *glanhei*; *glanhá'*; *glanhawn*.

46. Nouns ending with suffix *hád* (or *ád*) are accented on the last syllable; as,

Coffhád; *glanhád*; *bywhád*; *cryfhád*.

(a) This exception is accounted for by the circumstance of two syllables being contracted into one. For instance, *glanhád* would be written in full, *glanhüad*, and it would thus have the accent placed on the proper syllable; that is, on 'ha.' Hence some writers, desirous of lessening the number of exceptions, prefer the more open *glanhüad*, *glanhüau*, to the contracted forms *glanhád*, *glanháu*, &c.

47. Verbs ending with the diphthong *oi*; as *ymdroi*, *gordoi*; and such verbs as *dyheu*, *cyfleu*, have the accent on the last syllable; as,

Ymdroi'; *gordoi'*; *parotoi'*; *crynoi'*.
Dyheu'; *cyfleu'*.

48. And if the termination of the finite tenses of such verbs be monosyllabic, the accent is generally on it; but if it be of more than one syllable, the accent assumes its proper place.

One syll. *Parotoi'*; *parotown'*; *parotowch'*.
Two syll. *Parotóaf*; *parotóais*; *parotóast*.

(a) This exception is accounted for on the same ground as the preceding; for, etymologically speaking, the terminations *oi*, *eu*, *own*, &c. are not one, but two syllables. For instance, *ymdroi*, *cyfleu*, *parotown*, are divisible into *ymdro-i*, *cyfle-u*, *paroto-wn*. Hence some

¹ Some maintain that the circumflex accent is unnecessary when the *h* is introduced: others make use of both.

writers always place a diæresis over the former syllable, thus indicating that the accent should fall on it: *ymdröi*, *cyflëu*, *paratöwn*. Usually, however, the two syllables are considered as one.

49. Dissyllables beginning with the negative prefix *di* are frequently pronounced as two separate words. Thus,

Diben; dios, diblant; diawch; didraul,
are pronounced as if written

· Di ben; di os; di blant; di awch; di draul.

50. Dissyllabic adjectives beginning with the particle *go* are frequently pronounced as two separate words. Thus,

Gobrudd; godaer; godrwm; goddig; gogloff,
are pronounced as if written

Go brudd; go daer; go drwm; go ddig; go gloff.

(a) In fact, although these words, and many others, are recorded in *Dr. Pughe's Dictionary* as compound words, and occur sometimes as such; for example,

"O Dduw gwyn! i bryfyn brych
Ond oedd *odrwm* dy edrych?"

yet, for the most part, they are very properly written as distinct words.

51. Some verbs, beginning with the prefix *ym*, have the accent placed on the last syllable of the *3d pers. sing. of future indic.* and *2d pers. sing. imperative*, if a dissyllable; as,

Ymweled: ymwel'. Ymguddio: ymgudd'.
Ymolchi: ymolch'. Ymadaw: ymad'.

52. Some dissyllables beginning with *ys* are accented on the last syllable; as,

Yslac'; ystanc'; ysger'; ystorm'; ystwr', &c.

But some maintain that these words should be considered as monosyllables, and written *slac*, *stanc*, *sger*, *storm*, *stwr*, &c.

53. The personal pronouns *myfi*, *tydi*, *efe*, *efo*, *hyhi*, *nyni*, *chwy-chwi*, *hwynt-hwy*, are accented on the last syllable.

Myfi; tydi'; efe'; efo'; hyhi', &c.

(a) *Myfi*, *tydi*, *nyni*, *chwy-chwi*, have, in some districts of North Wales, the accent laid on the proper syllable; that is, on the penult. ('Tyred efo my'fi'.')

54. Such compound prepositions as *goruwch*, *goris*, *uwchlaw*, *gerllaw*, *gerbron*, *heblaw*, *islaw*, are accented on the last syllable:

Goruwch'; *goris'*; *uwchlaw'*; *gerllaw'*, &c.

But some look upon these as separate words, requiring to be written *gor uwch*, *gor is*, *uwch law*, *ger llaw*, &c.

55. Accent on the antepenult. Some trisyllables, having *w* as the second syllable, have the accent on the first; as,

Medd'wdod; *gwel'wlas*; *gwedd'wdod*.

Mar'wnad; *hoe'wder*; *chwer'wder*.

56. The words *Seisoneg* and *Seasonig* are accentuated on the first syllable: *Seis'oneg*, *Seis'onig*. Hence many writers, in order to have the accent placed on the penult, write *Seisneg* and *Seisnig*.

SYLLABLES AND WORDS.

57. A syllable is a simple sound represented by one or more letters. (*A-chas*; *an-ni-ddig*; *firwyth-lawn*.)

58. Words are divided into syllables according to the etymology assigned to them: *hynod*, *rhagenw*, *cablair*, must be divided into *hy-nod*, *rhag-enw*, *cabl-air*, (not *hynod*, *rha-genw*, *cab-lair*;) because they are compounded of *hy* and *nod*, *rhag* and *enw*, *cabl* and *gair*.

(a) In such words as *meadiannu*, (compounded of *meddiant* and *u*), *dannedd*, (compounded of *dant* and *edd*), *pummed*, (from *pump* and *ed*), *n* and *m* are joined to the last syllable, though, etymologically, they belong to the former. (*Meddian-nu*, *dan-nedd*, *pum-med*.)

59. Words are divided into *primitive*, *compound*, and *derivative*.

60. The *primitive* words are the most elementary parts of the language, and contain but one syllable. (*Bach*, *pen*, *ci*, *cor*, *llaw*, *cae*, *da*.)

(a) If we confine the term "primitive" to those small root-words which are not reducible to simpler elements, the primitives are not very numerous; but if under this term we comprehend those monosyllables, which can be deduced from still more elementary words, either British or foreign, it may be said that the Welsh language abounds with primitive words. We give a few instances of such words, accompanied by their etymologies.

Brâd, *treachery*; L. prodo, from pro-do. Doet, *wise*; L. doctus, from doceo.

Caeth, *bound*; L. captus, from capio. Clais, *a bruise*; Gr. κλάσις, from κλάω.

Câd, <i>a battle</i>	} from ca, <i>a hold, a shutting on</i> .
Cae, <i>an enclosure</i>	
Caw, <i>a band</i>	

61. Compound words are formed of two or more of the primitives, or of prefixes and primitives.

Cadfarch (cad-march)	Geirwir (gair-gwir)
Modrwy (bawd-rhwy)	Ceinfalch (cain-balch)
Geirlyfr (gair-llyfr)	Sychdir (sych-tir)
Annheg (an-teg)	A'nghyfiawn (an-cyf-iawn)
Cyfundrefn (cyf-un-trefn)	Dychryn (dy-cryn)

62. When two or more substantives, or substantives and adjectives, are joined together to form a compound, the adjective or the substantive that expresses the notion of an adjective, takes the precedence.

Duf+beiriant.
*Iawn*farn.

*Awyr*gylch.
*Dryg*fyd.

(a) The latter noun is put in the middle sound: cadfarch. (See §. 36.)

(b) Owing to the inadvertency of some Welsh scholars, we have several compounds formed contrary to the above rule. In *drych-feddwl*, *pwyslais*, *mammaeth*, *ponibren*, the noun in the possessive case is made to *follow* the other, whereas, according to the genius of the language, it should either *precede* the governing noun, or the compound should no longer be such. Thus *mammaeth* should be written either *maethfam*, or as two distinct words, *maethfam*. Names of churches in Wales, and some names of cities, are joined together in the same way; as *Llandingad*, *Llanfair*, *Llanfor*, *Caer-fyrddin*, *Caerlleon*, &c. which ought to have been written as separate words: *Llan Mair*, *Llan Mor*, *Caer Myrddin*, &c.

63. Derivative words are formed of primitives, or of compounds, by the addition of suffixes.

Barnol (barn-ol).	Swyddog (swydd-og).
Colledigaeth (coll-edig-aeth).	Cyfiawnhâd (cyf-iawn-hâd).
Tragwyddoldeb (tra-gwydd-ol-deb).	Teyrnas (teyrn-as).

(a) Some of the derivative words contain six or even seven syllables: in general, however, they do not exceed four or five, and, as Dr. Pughe remarks, "words having more than five are seldom used except from a sort of affectation."

SPELLING.

64. The mode of spelling Welsh words has been, and still is, very irregular and inconsistent. Without referring

to individuals, who have ingeniously constructed new systems, among whom *Dr. W. O. Pughe* may be considered as the leader, it may be said, that all the various schools may be regarded under two generic heads; one the *new school*, and the other the *old school*.

65. The members of the new school are those who follow *Dr. Pughe's* general principles; those of the old are such as have perfected into a system what appeared to have been the general tendency of the writers of the oldest manuscripts.

66. The principal points in which these schools differ are (1) the use of double consonants to indicate the quantity of words; (2) the use of certain prefixes, as *di*, *dy*, *cy*, *cym*, &c.; (3) the use of the aspirate *h*; (4) the use of the preposition *yn* before *m* and *ng*.

67. Since the time that *Dr. Pughe* introduced his system, Welsh orthography has been a subject of great controversy; but we regret to say, that scarcely any of the proposed changes and emendations have received a universal acceptance. It has been suggested of late, that a considerable number of the most learned scholars in the principality should be elected to deliberate on this subject, to lay down rules, and to impress on the Welsh literati at large, the expediency and the necessity of adopting one universal mode of orthography. Until this be effected, the following rules are proposed, which have been framed as moderately as possible in order to meet the views of both parties.

68. *a. Words should be spelt according to their etymology.* The following is *Dr. Pughe's* canon: "It is proper to write every word after the form of its substance, without either more or fewer letters than are to be found in its component parts, taken severally, that its origin or derivation may not be obscured^m." Therefore consonants should not be doubled unless the etymology of the words demands, nor be omitted if their etymology require, their insertion. For instance, the words *penau*, *tori*, are compounded of *pen* and *au*, *tor* and *i*, and should not therefore be spelt *pennau*, *torri*, with double consonants. Again, *mammaeth*, *annoeth*, are compounded of *mam* and *maeth*, *an* and *doeth*, and ought not, according to *Pughe's* canon, to be written *mamaeth*, *anoeth*, with single consonants. Their insertion in *penau*

^m "*Cadwedigaeth yr iaith Gymraeg*," p. 12.

and *tori*, and their omission in *mammaeth* and *annoeth*, would tend to obscure the origin or derivation of the words.

(a) This should be regarded only as a general principle, and must not be applied strictly to every word in the language; for in very many instances words are, and always have been, written with fewer letters than there are in their component parts, taken severally.

The letter *g* is very often omitted when the word, of which it is the initial, is preceded by another word or prefix. *Cywir*=*cy-gwir*; *anweledig*=*an-gweledig*; *diorfod*=*di-gorfod*. Again, in the following words, with many others which might be mentioned, one consonant is omitted: *meithrin*=*maeth-trin*; *sobrwydd*=*sobr-rwydd*; *sicrwydd*=*sicr-rwydd*; *amyd*=*amŷ-yd*; *canwriad*=*canŷ-gwr-riad*; *eneinio*=*enainŷ-io*.

69. When a short vowel occurs in a syllable, the old school double the consonant next to it, maintaining that it is necessary in order to show the quantity of the vowel.

Cyfrannu; *calonnau*; *hwnnau*; *tonnau*.

70. When long and short vowels are to be distinguished in monosyllabic words, some of the new school mark the long with a circumflex, and the short with a grave,—*tân*, fire, *tàn*, under; others mark the short vowel only,—*tan*, *tàn*; others mark the long, leaving the short vowel without any indication of its quantity. The writer would recommend the adoption of this last plan.

Tân, fire; *tan*, under.

Tôn, a tune; *ton*, a wave.

Glân, clean; *glan*, a river bank.

Hŷn, older; *hyn*, this.

71. *β*. The prefixes *an*; *di*, *dy*; *cy*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*; *as*, *es*, *ys*, and their compounds, *cys*, *dis*, *dys*, *dos*, *gos*, *hys*.

72. *An*. When *an* (=un) is prefixed to the nasal sound of *g* or *c*, let *n* be cut off, and its omission be indicated by an apostrophe.

A'ngreddf (an-greddf)
A'nghysson (an-cysson)

A'ngradd (an-gradd)
A'nghywir (an-cywir)

(a) Some deem it improper to syncopate the prefix, writing *angreddf*, *annghysson*, &c.: others omit *n* without indicating its omission; *angreddf*, *anghysson*. According to the former mode the words are said to be difficult of pronunciation; according to the latter the prefix *an* is not sufficiently distinguished from the intensive *a*; as in *angwarth*, disgraceful, from *a*, very, and *gwarth*, disgrace.

Observ. *Ng* is the nasal of *g*; *ngh* of *c*.

73. When *an* is prefixed to the nasal sound of *b* or *p*, let it be changed into *am*, for the sake of euphony.

Ammraint (an-braint) Ammhrydlawn (an-prydlawn.)

Observ. *M* is the nasal of *b*; *mh* of *p*.

74. *Di* and *dy*. Let *di* (=less) and its compound *dis* (*di-ys*) be used when *negation* is implied; *dy* and its compound *dys* (*dy-ys*) when *intensity* is implied.

Negation.

Diog (di-og)

Diorfod (di-gorfod)

Disliw (dis-lliw)

Intensity.

Dyben (dy-pen)

Dynoethi (dy-noethi)

Dystaw (dys-taw)

(a) The old school employ *di* both as a negative and an intensive prefix; as *diben*, headless, *diben*, purpose.

Cy, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*=Lat. *con*.

75. *Cym*. When words begin with *m*, whether *m* be radical or the nasal sound of *b* or *p*, let *cym* precede them.

Cymmeryd^a (cym-*μαρη*, a hand) Cymmrawd (cym-brawd)

Cymmhorth (cym-porth) Cymmhwys (cym-pwys.)

Observ. *M* is the nasal of *b*; *mh* of *p*.

76. *Cyn*. When words begin with *n*, whether *n* be radical or the nasal sound of *d* or *t*, let *cyn* precede them.

Cynnifer (cyn-nifer). Cynnal (cyn-dal).

Cynnhwrf (cyn-twrf). Cynnadl (cyn-dadl).

Observ. *N* is the nasal of *d*; *nh* of *t*.

77. *Cys*. When words begin with *s*, let *cys* precede them.

Cysson (cys-son). Cyssefin (cys-saf).

(a) A branch of the new school adopts *cy* in preference to *cym*, *cyn*, and *cys*. It is, however, very doubtful whether it may be correctly used for *cym* and *cyn*, as *cy* has a tendency to govern the labials and dentals in the *middle* sound. Cyfrad (cy-brad); cyfoli (cy-moli).

78. *Cy*. When words begin with *ng* and *ngh*, the nasal sounds of *g* and *c*, let *cy* precede them.

Cyngwystl (cy-gwystl). Cyngwerth (cy-gwerth).

Cynghor (cy-cor). Cynghair (cy-crair).

As, *es*, *ys*, and their compounds *cys*, *dis*, *dys*, *dos*, *gos*, *hys*.

^a *Cymmeryd*=to grasp with the hand.

79. These prefixes, when followed by words beginning radically with *d* or *t*, prefer the *t* sound.

Astell (as-dell)	Estyn (=L. <i>extendo</i>)	Ystyr ^o (=Gr. <i>ἄστρον</i>)
Astrus (=L. <i>abstrusus</i>)	Estron (=L. <i>extraneus</i>)	Ystwyll (=L. <i>stella</i>)
Crystal (cys-tal)	Dystaw (dys-taw)	Gosteg (gos-teg = L. <i>tacitus</i>)

80. When followed by words beginning radically with *g* or *c*, they prefer the *g* sound.

Asgafaeth (as-cafaeth)	Disgyn (=L. <i>descendo</i>)
Esgyn (=L. <i>ascendo</i>)	Gosgel (gos-cel)
Esgar (es-car)	Gosgordd (gos-cordd = L. <i>cohorte</i>)
Ysgafn (ys-cawn)	Cysgod (cy-ysgod Gr. = <i>σκότος</i>)
Ysgarm (ys-garm)	Dysgweini (dys-gweini)

81. When followed by words beginning radically with *b* or *p*, they prefer the *b* sound.

Asborth (as-porth)	Cysbod (cys-bod)	Dosbarth (dos-parth)
Ysbryd (=L. <i>spiritus</i>)	Cysbwyll (cys-pwyll)	Gosben (gos-pen)
Ysbwrial (ys-bwrw)	Disbrofi (dis profi)	Hysbysu (hys-byg)

82. *γ*. The use of the aspirate *h*. Let *h* be used as an auxiliary before the substantive termination *ād*; before the verbal termination *āu*, and the finite terminations formed therefrom.

Cyfiawnhād; cyfiawnhāu; cyfiawnhāf; cyfiawnhei.

(a) Nouns and verbs ending with *c*, *ch*, *p*, *t*, or *th*, cannot admit of the insertion of the aspirate.

Nacāu (not *nachau*); iachāu; gwlypāu.

Caniatāu; esmwythāu.

(b) A branch of the new school objects to the use of *h* in the above-mentioned circumstances, maintaining that it should not be inserted except when it forms an essential part of a word; as in *anhawdd*, from *an* and *hawdd*. We should, however, consider the difference between a predominant part of a compound word, and a mere termination; and that greater liberty may be taken with the latter than with the former.

(c) The old school spell *breninoedd*, *enedloedd*, *dammegion*, *arosiad*, *dangosiad*, and other words, with the aspirate, *brenhinoedd*, *cenhedloedd*, &c. This spelling is based on pronunciation; but as their roots *brenin*, *enedl*, *dammeg*, &c. are scarcely ever pronounced, and seldom written *brenhin*, *cenhedl*, *dammheg*, &c. and as the *h* forms no part of any of these words, it would certainly be less perplexing and more uniform not to insert it P.

* *Ys* in *ystyr*, *ystwyll*, &c. is not strictly a prefix; but it is convenient to consider it here as such.

P For further remarks, see Tegid's "Reply to the Rev. W. B. Knight's Remarks on Welsh Orthography," p. 31.

83. *ð*. The use of the preposition *yn*, *in*.

84. Let *yn* be changed into *ym*, when it is followed by *m* and *mh*.

Ym mynydd yr Olewydd.

Ym medydd Ioan.

Ym mhlwyf Llandingad.

Ym mhen y ffordd.

85. Let *yn* be changed into *yng*, when followed by *ng* and *ngh*.

Yng ngwraidd y pren.

Yng ngwyneb haul.

Yng Nghrist.

Yng ngharchar y swydd.

(a) The new school write *yn* in all cases: *yn mynydd*, *yn mhen*, *yn ngwyneb*, *yn ngharchar*.

(b) Some join the prep. to the following word: thus,

Ymmhen, y'mhen or ymhen.

Y'ngwreiddyn or yngwreiddyn.

But this mode is liable to an objection; for when *yn* is prefixed to a monosyllable, (thus forming a dissyllable,) the accent falls on the ultimate: *y'mhen*¹, *ymhawb*¹, *y'ngwraidd*¹, *y'ngkil*¹; and thus another exception to the rule of accentuation is added, although it can easily be avoided.

86. *ε*. The use of *nn* and *mm*, when mutations of *nt* and *mp*. When a suffix with a vowel initial is added to a word ending with *nt* or *mp*, let *t* be changed into *n* and *p* into *m*.

Meddiannu, from meddiant

Punnoedd, from punt.

Dannedd, dant

Tannau

tant.

Tymmor

tymp=tempore.

Pummed

pump.

87. *ζ*. Words of doubtful origin. When the etymology of a word is not generally agreed upon, it is more proper to spell that word according to the usual mode. "*Diosg*," *to undress*, is generally written with *di*; but some scholars write it *dyosg*, with *dy*, because, as they think, the word is compounded of *dy* and *osg*¹. But as this etymology is not quite clear, (it being as likely that the word comes from *di* and *gwisgo*, quasi *diwisg*,) we should write it "*diosg*" according to usual practice.

88. *η*. Words cognate with those of other languages. When words are derived from, or cognate with, words of other languages, their orthography, as touching the number of consonants, should in general be the same. Thus, as there are *μμ* in the Greek word *γραμματική*, from which the Welsh term is derived, '*grammadeg*' should be spelt with

¹ "*Osg*, what tends from or out." *Pughe's Dictionary*.

mm, and not '*gramadeg*,' with a single *m*. Again, as there is only one *t* in *tri* and *etiam*, with which the Welsh word is cognate, we should write '*eto*' with one *t*, and not '*etto*' with *tt*.

89. This is only a general rule. Should, however, an adherence to the orthography of another language violate a principle of the Welsh, or disturb a custom of long standing in the mode of spelling some words, the former should in this case submit to the latter; that is, the peculiarity exhibited in the Welsh should be observed and carried out, even though it should differ from that of another language.

PART II.

ETYMOLOGY.

CLASSIFICATION OF WORDS.

90. The parts of speech are: *substantive* (or *noun*), *adjective*, *pronoun*, *verb*, *participle*, *article*, *adverb*, *conjunction*, *preposition*, *interjection*.

SUBSTANTIVES (OR NOUNS).

91. A substantive or noun¹ is the name of an object, that has or is conceived to have an independent existence.

92. *Proper nouns* are such as denote the names of individual men or other objects. (Arthur, Bala.)

93. *Common nouns* are such as denote any of the individuals, that are contained in a class of things. (Dyn, *man*; tref, *town*.)

94. *Abstract nouns* are the names of qualities or properties conceived by the mind as having independent existence. (Cyfiawnder, *justice*; gwynder, *whiteness*.)

95. A *collective noun* or a *noun of multitude* is a singular noun, that expresses a collection of many individuals. (Llu, *multitude*; tyrfa, *a crowd*.)

TERMINATIONS OF NOUNS.

96. It is necessary to introduce in this place the terminations or suffixes of nouns, as they afford the best clue we have of finding the gender and the plural endings of derivative nouns. They will be more fully explained hereafter.

¹ Although perhaps open to objection, the term *noun* has been employed throughout the present work as synonymous with *substantive*.

a. These denote *quality* or *state*. *Deb, der, did, dra, dod, edd, i, iant, ant, aint, id, ioni, ineb, ni, rwydd, wch, yd, ydd.*

b. These denote an *agent* or *person*. *Wr (iwr), wraig, wr, wres, adur, ydd, yddes, or, ores, yr, r, on, es, ai, ad, (iad.)*

c. These are *diminutive terminations*. *An, en, ig, og, yn.*

d. The following, owing to the variety of uses in which they are employed, cannot be conveniently classified. *Ach, hâd, od, ar, arn, aeg, eg, aeth (iaeth), en, ig, og, yn, aid, ain, as, es, au (or eu), eb, ed, el, ell, fa, in, l, w, yll, ol, red, wy, ing, wg, yf, iar.*

NUMBER OF NOUNS.

97. Nouns have two numbers; the *singular* and the *plural*.

(a) 'In a few words, we have a *dual number*, formed by prefixing *dau* for the masculine, and *dwy* for the feminine, to such words as are required to be of that number.'

Deurudd } *the two cheeks.* Dwyglust, *the two ears.*

Dwyrudd } *the two cheeks.* Deulin, *the two knees.*

Deudroed, *the two feet.* Dwyfron, *the breasts.*

Dwylaw (*the two hands*), though strictly dual, is now used for the plural.

98. **Formation of the plural.** A noun singular is rendered plural in three ways. (a) By changing a vowel or vowels; as *bardd, beirdd*; *careg, ceryg*. (β) By adding a syllable; as *dyn, dynion*. (γ) By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding a syllable; as *mab, meibion*.

99. a. *By changing a vowel or vowels.* The nouns, which become plural by inflection of vowels, are for the most part monosyllables and dissyllables, with their compounds.

A	} becomes	{	<i>ai</i> ; sant, <i>a saint</i> , pl. saint. So bran, gofant.
			<i>ei</i> ; march, <i>a horse</i> , pl. meirch. So sarff, bardd, arf, iarll, tarw, carw, car, arth, gast, iar, gafr, tywarch.
			<i>y</i> ; bustach, <i>a bullock</i> , pl. bustych.
E	} becomes	{	<i>i</i> ; draen, <i>a thorn</i> , pl. drain ^r . So maen, pl. meini.
			<i>y</i> ; cyllell, <i>a knife</i> , pl. cyllyll. So Gwyddel, gwden.

^r It makes no difference whether we say that (*e. g.*), in the word *draen*, *ae* is changed into *ai*, or that *e* is changed into *i*, in the formation of the plural.

O becomes *y*; ffon, *a staff*, pl. ffyn. So fforch, ffordd, porth, torch, mollt, post, cort, corff, pont, gordd, corn.

A and E become respectively *e* and *y*; careg, *a stone*, pl. ceryg^a. So aber, castell, gwaell, asgell, astell, padell, tafell, angell, gradell, mantell, maneg, llawes, bachgen, llanerch, caseg.

A and A become *e* and *ai*; dafad, *a sheep*, pl. defaid.

A and A *e* and *y*; aradr, *a plough*, pl. erydr. So afall, paladr, alarch, taradr, myharan.

A and W *e* and *y*; asgwrn, *a bone*, pl. esgyrn.

100. Very many derivative and compound nouns are made plural by changing *a* of the ultimate into *ai*; as,

Offeiriad, *a priest*, pl. offeiriad. Canwriad, *a centurion*, pl. canwriad.

Llygad, *an eye*, pl. llygaid. Gwial, *a rod*, pl. gwial.

Ehediad, *a fowl*, pl. ehediaid. Llyffant, *a frog*, pl. llyffaint.

101. *β. By adding a syllable.* The following is a list of the plural terminations of substantives. *Ach*, *ain*, *aint*, *au*, *awr*, *ed*, *edd*, *en*, *i*, *iaid*, *iau*, *ion*, *od*, *os*, *oedd*, *on*, *yd*, *yr*.

Ach; dynion, dynionach.

Ain: pen, penain.

Aint; gof, gofaint.

Au; pen, penau.

Awr; gwaew, gwaewawr.

Ed; merch, merched.

Edd; bys, bysedd.

En^t; ych, ychen.

I; perth, perthi.

Iaid; eog, eogiaid.

Iau^a; esgid, esgidiau.

Ion^a; dyn, dynion.

Od; colomen, colomenod.

Os; plant, plantos.

Oedd; mynydd, mynyddoedd.

On; llw, llwon.

Ydd; afon, afonydd.

Yr; brawd, brodyr.

(a) *Au* and *iau*, *on* and *ion*, are the terminations most frequently in use. *Oedd* also occurs very often. *Awr*, *ain*, and *yr*, are but seldom met with.

(b) *Od* is most frequently applied to irrational animals; as *llygod*, *ysgyfarnogod*, *cwningod*, *ednod*, *llwynogod*, *bychod*, *buwchod*, *pysgud*, *draenogod*, *hyrddod*, *eryrod*, *llewod*, *cathod*, *bwystfilod*, *milod*.

(c) *Ach* and *os* are added to plurals. *Ach* denotes contempt or wretchedness; *os*, affection or tenderness.

"Dowch y pydron ddyinionach,

"Yng nghyd, feirw byd, fawr a bach." Gor. Owen.

(d) Some writers use *aid* for *ed*: as *pryfaid*; and *ain* for *en*; as, *ychain*, *Rhydychain*.

102. *γ. By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding a syllable.* The changes, which the vowels undergo on the

^a Some write *cerig*, *gweill*, *llewis*, &c. but it is more uniform to write *ceryg*, &c.

^t Cf. Eng. *en*: oxen, cowen=kine.

^a For *iau* and *ion* the South-Walians say *au* and *on*.

accession of a syllable, are, in general, the same as those in *Rule a*.

A	} becomes	{ <i>e</i> ; as <i>nant</i> , a <i>brook</i> , pl. <i>nentydd</i> .
		{ <i>ei</i> ; as <i>mab</i> , a <i>son</i> , pl. <i>meibion</i> .
A		<i>ei</i> or <i>ew</i> ; as <i>saer</i> , a <i>carpenter</i> , pl. <i>seiri</i> ; <i>maes</i> , pl. <i>meusydd</i> .
AI		<i>ei</i> ; as <i>gair</i> , a <i>word</i> , pl. <i>geirian</i> ; <i>nai</i> , pl. <i>neiaint</i> .
Au		<i>ew</i> ; as <i>paun</i> , a <i>peacock</i> , pl. <i>peunod</i> ; <i>ffau</i> , pl. <i>ffeau</i> .
Aw		<i>o</i> ; as <i>awr</i> , an <i>hour</i> , pl. <i>oriau</i> . <i>Aw</i> is sometimes corruptly changed into <i>ow</i> ; as <i>cawg</i> , pl. <i>cowgiau</i> .
W		<i>y</i> ; as <i>bwrdd</i> , a <i>table</i> , pl. <i>byrddau</i> ; <i>llwdn</i> , pl. <i>llydnod</i> .
W and w . .		<i>y</i> and <i>y</i> ; as <i>cwmwl</i> , a <i>cloud</i> , pl. <i>cymylau</i> .
AI and ei		sometimes become <i>a</i> ; as <i>gwraig</i> , pl. <i>gwagedd</i> ; <i>deigr</i> , pl. <i>dagrau</i> ; <i>neidr</i> , pl. <i>nadroedd</i> (and <i>nadredd</i>), <i>lleidr</i> , pl. <i>lladron</i> .

103. The terminations, mentioned under *β*, were formerly indifferently applied to almost all nouns; but popular custom has confined this liberty, admitting of but one termination to the majority of Welsh words. Yet there are many nouns which still have two, and some even three different plural forms: thus, we may say *gordderchion*, or *gordderchadon*; *mynyddoedd*, or *mynyddau*; *treft*, or *treftydd*; *eglwysi*, or *eglwysydd*; *plwyft*, or *plwyfydd*; *blynyddoedd*, or *blynyddau*; *llythyrau*, or *llythyron*, &c.

104. In limiting the use of the terminations, care should have been taken to restrict each to a particular class of substantives; but we find that this was very much neglected. Hence the impossibility of laying down any definite rules for their formation.

105. The following are laid down as *general rules* for the formation of the plural number of *derivative* nouns.

106. Derivatives ending in

Der, *did*, *dod*, *edd*, *yd*, *yr*, *r*, *aeth*, *as*, are rendered plural by adding *au*.

Cyflawnder, cyflawnderau.

Awdurdod, awdurdodau.

Bywyd, bywydau.

Llyfr, llyfrau.

Priodas, priodasau.

Gwendid, gwendidau.

Gwaeledd, gwaeleddau.

Papyr, papyrau.

Marwolaeth, marwolaethau.

(a) Substantives ending in *iant* change *t* into *n* and add *au*: *meddiant*, *meddiannau*.

Wr, *iwr*, pl. *wyr*: *wraig*, pl. *wragedd*.

Swynwr, *swynwyr*. *Llaethwraig*, *llaethwragedd*.

Ur, adur, pl. *on*, *iau*, *iaid*.

Awdur, awduron. Gwniadur, gwniaduriau. Pechadur, pechaduriaid.

Ydd, or (or *awr*) *og* (or *awg*) pl. *ion*.

Ysgrifenydd, ysgrifenyddion. Cantor, cantorion. Marchog, marchogion.

Es, pl. *au*. Brenines, breninesau.

Ai, pl. *eion*. Gwestai, gwesteion.

Ad (*iad*), pl. *aid* and *au*. When denoting a *verbal noun*, it is made pl. by adding *au*: when signifying a *person*, *a* is changed into *ai*.

Caniad, caniadau. Offeiriad, offeiriaid.

Ach (reproach), pl. *od*. Bwbach, bwbachod.

Od (or *awd*), pl. *au* or *iau*.

Treithawd, treithodau. Ffonod, ffonodiau.

An (person), pl. *od*; *an* (instrument) pl. *au*.

Lleban, llebanod. Cryman, crymanau.

Ed, pl. *au*, *ion*.

Adduned, addunedau. Colled, colledion.

Ell, pl. *yll*, *au*, *i*.

Cylllell, cyllyll. Troell, troellau. Bothell, bothelli.

Fa, pl. *oedd*, *feydd*.

Cynulleidfa, cynulleidfaoedd. Llosgfa, llosgfeydd.

107. The pl. number of the following nouns is formed irregularly.

Ci, pl. cwn.

Ty, pl. tai.

Troed, pl. traed.

Croen, pl. crwyn.

Oen, pl. wyn.

Gwr, pl. gwyr.

108. Some few nouns are made plural from the adjectives of the singular noun.

Gwlaw, pl. gwlawogydd

fr. gwlawog, *rainy*.

Llif, pl. llifogydd

fr. llifog, *streaming*.

Gras, pl. grasusau

fr. grasus, *gracious*.

Cristion, pl. cristionogion

fr. cristionog, *christian*.

109. Many nouns, made plural by inflection of vowels, may also be rendered plural by adding a syllable. Thus we have

Pont, pl. pynt, or pontydd.

Alarch, pl. elych, or alarchod.

Aber, pl. ebyr, or aberoedd.

Astell, pl. estyll, or astallod.

110. A few have a double plural; i. e. one pl. formed from the other: llo, *calf*, pl. lloi and lloiau; ty, *house*, pl. tai and teiau.

111. Some nouns are used in the plural number only; as ymysgaroedd, *bowels*; gwartheg, *cattle*.

112. Plural number wanted. Some substantives want the plural number; as,

a. Abstract nouns. [See terminations of abstract nouns §. 96. *a.*]

Tristwch; tyndra; ffyddlondeb; atgasrwydd.

β. Proper names and most of the diminutive nouns.
Arthur; dynyn, oenig.

γ. Nouns denoting substance, mass, &c.; as aur, *arian*, pres, *efydd*, baw, *gwaed*, bara, *ymenyn*, llaeth, *mel*, caws, *pridd*, &c.

(*a*) But such words as *yd*, corn; *haid*, barley, &c. which may be termed nouns aggregate, take a plural termination when various collections of the same are designed to be expressed. *Yd*, corn; *ydau*, various sorts of corn.

Observ. The want of a plural termination in the above cases is not peculiar to the Welsh language; but will be found to prevail in other languages as well. There is generally no plurality of idea in the things expressed by these words, and hence a plural number is inadmissible.

113. Formation of the singular from the plural. Some nouns of the singular number are formed from the plural by suffixing *yn* for the *mas.*, and *en*, for the *fem.* gender.

Caws, cosyn, *a cheese.*

Adar, aderyn, *a bird.*

Plant, plantyn, *a child.*

Gwybed, gwybedyn, *a fly.*

Gwair, gweiryndyn, *a blade of hay.*

Yd, yden, *a grain of corn.*

Mes, mesen, *an acorn.*

Derw, derwen, *an oak.*

Gwenyn, gwenynen, *a bee.*

Plu, pluen, *a feather.*

GENDER OF NOUNS.

114. Nouns are either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. The Welsh language does not recognise what is called the '*neuter gender*'; hence all inanimate things, which are classed as neuter in English, are considered either as masculine or feminine in our language; and this is done by conceiving their properties to bear some resemblance to

the qualities that are characteristic of sex in animated beings.'

(a) "Thus the *masculine* gender is given to substantives, which are conspicuous for the attributes of energy, and of acting upon and communicating to others. To such substantives as seem to denote the passive attributes of bearing, containing or bringing forth, we give the *feminine* gender¹."

115. Some nouns are of *common gender*; that is, masculine and feminine; as *plentyn*, a *child*; *bahan*, a *babe*; *rhiant*, a *parent*. But in construction they are usually resolved into the masculine.

116. The Welsh language, by not recognising a *neuter* gender, expressive of inanimate objects, presents to the student a difficulty not to be surmounted in many cases but by observation and memory.

117. 'With respect to those which are the names of males and females no difficulty exists; they are either male or female in accordance with their signification.' *Dyn*, *man*, *tarw*, *bull*, *mas*. *Dynes*, *woman*, *buwch*, *cow*, *fem*.

118. The gender of such nouns is distinguished,
a. *By different words.*

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Adiad, <i>drake</i> .	Hwyaden, <i>duck</i> .
Bachgen, <i>boy</i> .	Geneth, <i>girl</i> .
Baedd, <i>boar</i> .	Hwch, <i>sow</i> .
Brawd, <i>brother</i> .	Chwaer, <i>sister</i> .
Bustach, or eidion, <i>bullock</i> .	Anner, <i>heifer</i> .
Carw, hydd, <i>stag</i> .	Ewig, <i>hind</i> .
Cefnder, <i>cousin</i> .	Cyfnither, <i>cousin</i> .
Ceffyl, <i>horse</i> .	Caseg, <i>mare</i> .
Ceillog, <i>cock</i> .	Iar, <i>hen</i> .
Ci, <i>dog</i> .	Gant (for cies), <i>bitch</i> .
Fwythr, <i>uncle</i> .	Modryb, <i>aunt</i> .
Gwas, <i>man-servant</i> .	Morwyn, <i>maid-servant</i> .
Gwr, <i>husband</i> .	Gwraig, <i>wife</i> .
Hwrdd, <i>ram</i> .	Dafad, <i>sheep</i> .
Mab, <i>son</i> .	Merch, <i>daughter</i> .
Nai, <i>nephew</i> .	Nith, <i>niece</i> .
Tad, <i>father</i> .	Mam, <i>mother</i> .
Taid }	Nain, }
Tad cu }	Mam gu }
Tarw, <i>bull</i> .	Buwch, <i>cow</i> .

¹ Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 30.

(a) The compounds of the above are distinguished in the same manner.

Priodfab, *bridegroom*.
Golchwr, *washer*.

Priodferch, *bride*.
Golchwraig, *washer-woman*.

β. By adding the termination *es* to the masculine gender, or by changing *yn* into *en*.

Mas
Arglwydd, *lord*.
Mynach, *monk*.
Dyn, *man*.
Brenin, *king*.
Tywysog, *prince*.
Asyn, *he ass*.
Hogyn, *young lad*.
Coegyn, *saucy fellow*.

Fem.
Arglwyddes, *lady*.
Mynaches, *nun*.
Dynes, *woman*.
Brenines, *queen*.
Tywysoges, *princess*.
Asen, *she ass*.
Hogen, *young girl*.
Coegen, *saucy girl*.

γ. By placing the word *gwrryw* or *benyw* after the object spoken of. But the *mas.* gender is sometimes formed from the *fem.* by prefixing the word *ceiliog*, a cock, or *bucch*, a buck.

Eryr gwrryw, *a he-eagle*. Eryr benyw, *a she-eagle*.
Colomen wrryw, *a he-dove*. Colomen fenyw, *a she-dove*.
Ceiliogwydd, *a gander*, from Gwydd, *a goose*.
Bwch gafr, *a he-goat*, from Gafr, *a goat*.

(a) The nouns, to which *gwrryw* and *benyw* are added, are, some masculine, and some feminine; and we must know the gender before we can correctly apply these words. If the noun is *mas.*, *gwrryw* and *benyw* will take the *radical*; if *fem.*, they will be changed into the *middle* sound.

Eryr gwrryw, *mas.*; colomen fenyw, *fem.*

119. With regard to the names of inanimate objects, the following rules may be laid down; but they extend to certain classes only, and must be regarded merely as *general rules*.

120. a. Primitive nouns have their gender often denoted by their vowels.

a. Nouns having *w* or *y* as their final vowel are *masculine*.

Pwn, *a pack*. Twrch, *a hog*.
Dwrn, *a fist*. Dwfr, *water*.
Cwr, *a corner*. Cŵd, *a bag*.

Hŷd, *length*. Prŷd, *appearance*.
Bŷd, *world*. Bryn, *a bank*.
Clwyf, *disease*. Rwyd, *food*.

b. Nouns having *o* or *ö* for their final vowel are of the *feminine* gender.

Ton, <i>a wave.</i>	Torch, <i>a chain.</i>	Gwên, <i>a smile.</i>	Sëdd, <i>a seat.</i>
Bron, <i>a breast.</i>	Fforch, <i>a fork.</i>	Gên, <i>a chin.</i>	Gwlëdd, <i>a banquet.</i>
Ffon, <i>a staff.</i>	Côd, <i>a bag.</i>	Llêf, <i>a cry.</i>	Nêf, <i>heaven.</i>

121. The remaining vowels are not susceptible of any kind of classification, being used indifferently in masculines or feminines. Indeed, all that can be said with regard to the above-mentioned vowels is, that *w* and *y* have a tendency to be of the *masculine*, and *o* and *e* a tendency to be of the *feminine* gender.

122. *β. Compound nouns* have their gender often assigned to them in accordance with the gender of the *last* of their component parts. For example, *ty*, a house, is *masculine*, and hence its compounds *gwyndy*, *diotty*, *arfdy*, *eleusendy*, *hundy*, *hafotty*, *monachdy*, are also *masculine*. *Ffordd*, a road, is *feminine*, and hence *prif-ffordd*, *ceuffordd*, *croesffordd*, are likewise *feminine*.

123. *γ. Derivative nouns* have their gender frequently indicated by their respective terminations.

124. Nouns ending with the following suffixes are generally of the *masculine* gender: *deb*, *der*, *did*, *tid*, *dod*, *dra*, *edd*, *i*, *iant*, *awd*, *aint*, *id*, *ioni*, *ineb*, *ni*, *rwydd*, *uch*, *yd*, *wr*, *ur*, *ydd*, *yr*, *on*, *or*, *ad*, *häd*, *og*, *yn*, *w*, *yll*.

125. Nouns ending with these terminations are generally *feminine*: *as*, *aeg*, *eb*, *ed*, *eg*, *en*, *es*, *ell*, *fa*, *ig*, *oni*, *oneg*, *oniaeth*, *red*, *wraig*.

(a.) *Aeth* and *iaeth*, *ach*, *an*, are sometimes masculine and sometimes feminine; as *penaeth* (*mas.*) a chief; *llywodraeth* (*fem.*) government; *gwahaniaeth* (*mas.*) difference, *iachawdwriaeth* (*fem.*) salvation; *corach* (*mas.*) a pigmy, *gwrach* (*fem.*) a hag; *llyfran* (*mas.*) a little book, *trefan* (*fem.*) a small hamlet.

(b.) *Ai* is frequently of common gender; as *telynai*, *magai*, *gwestai*.

126. Many words, which are considered as masculine in one district, are used as feminine in another. For instance, the word *troed*, a foot, is masculine in the dialect of North Wales, as *y troed hun*; but in South Wales it is of the feminine gender, as *y droed hon*. The words, *effaith*, *yrgrif*, *clust*, *rhif*, *nifer*, *sain*, *munyd*, *man*, *golwg*, *ystyr*, *gradd*, and others, have the same peculiarity of usage.

127. The same words are often mas. or fem. as in English, in accordance with the idea they convey. For example, the word *doethineb*, *wisdom*, has the construction of a masculine noun in ordinary discourse; but when it is by a figure of speech, considered as a person or agent, it takes the construction of a noun of the feminine gender. "*Doethineb* a adeiladodd *ei thy*, *hi* a naddodd *ei* saith golofn. *Hi* a laddodd *ei* hanifeiliaid; *hi* a gymmysgodd *ei* gwin, ac a huiodd *ei* bwrdd." (*Prov.* ix. 1, 2.)

128. Gambold's rule. The following rule, intended for discovering the gender of nouns beginning with the mutable consonants, may prove useful to such as are well acquainted with the language, but who may be uncertain as to the gender of many nouns, except when they are in construction with other words. "Any word [of the singular number] beginning with any of the mutable consonants, except *ll* and *rh*¹, if upon putting *y* in apposition before it, its initial consonant does naturally change into its *light* [or *middle*] sound; as *melin*, *y felin*; *caseg*, *y gaseg*; such words are infallibly of the *feminine* gender. But if the initial consonant change not thereupon, we may justly conclude such words to be of the *masculine* gender; as *brethyn*, *y brethyn*; *march*, *y march*²."

CASES OF NOUNS.

129. In Welsh, nouns have no endings to denote their various relations to other notions, as they have in Greek and Latin; but, as in English, their relation is shewn by means of prepositions. (Aethym o dŷ Ioan i dŷ Arthur.) It is, however, convenient to adopt the terms *nominative case*, *possessive* (or *genitive*), *objective* (or *accusative*), and *vocative*.

ADJECTIVES.

130. Adjectives qualify nouns and pronouns. (Dyn *da*, a good man.)

131. Primitive adjectives. "The adjectives of the primitive form consist of elementary words, without the

¹ Fem. nouns sing. generally retain the radical sound after *ll* and *rh*; as *y llong*; *y rhau*.

² Gambold's *Grammar*, p. 24.

additions of the common terminations, which characterise the derivatives^a." (Iawn, da, crwn.)

132. Compound adjectives are such as are formed by the union of two or more of the primitives, or of a prefix and a primitive. (Glewdaer, gorwymp.)

133. "The derivative adjectives are other words becoming such, by the addition of certain characteristic terminations^b." (Goludog, duwiol, gwaedlyd.)

TERMINATIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

134. The following terminations, which will be exemplified hereafter, are those which occur most frequently in the composition of derivative adjectives. *Adwy, aid, aidd, ain, awr ed (fed) edig, fawr, gar, ig, llawn (lawn), in, llyd (lyd), og (awg), ol (awl), and us.*

GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

135. Adjectives are of the *masculine, feminine, or common gender.*

136. In Welsh, 'the discrimination of gender is partial with respect to primitive adjectives, and the derivatives (except two or three^c) are exempt from it.'

(a) This is said with respect to gender formed by inflection of *vowels*, not to gender indicated by a change of the *initial consonant*.

137. Inflection of vowels. The *fem.* gender is formed from the *mas. (a)* by changing *w* into *o*, (*b*) by changing *y* into *e*.

(a) By changing *w* into *o*.

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>		<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	
Blwng,	blong,	<i>frowning.</i>	Fflwch,	ffloch,	<i>abrupt.</i>
Brwnt,	bront,	<i>nasty.</i>	Llwm,	llom,	<i>bare.</i>
Crwm,	crom,	<i>bent.</i>	Mwll,	moll,	<i>sultry.</i>
Crwn,	cron,	<i>round.</i>	Pwl,	pol,	<i>blunt.</i>
Dwl,	dol,	<i>stupid.</i>	Rhwth,	rhoth,	<i>open.</i>

^a *Dr. Pughe's Grammar*, p. 54.

^b *Ib.* p. 54.

^c *Bychan, melyn*, and sometimes *tywyll*, make *bechan, melen, tywell*, in the *fem.*

"Nos da i'r ynys *dywell*."

"Ni wn a oes un ynys *well*." *Lewis Glyn Cothi.*

A few of the cardinal and ordinal numbers have their vowels inflected to form the *fem. gender*. [see §. 154 (a), 155 (a).]

Swrth,	sorth,	<i>drowsy.</i>	Trwm,	trom,	<i>heavy.</i>
Tlws,	tlos,	<i>pretty.</i>	So Hwn,	hon,	<i>this.</i>
Twn,	ton,	<i>broken.</i>	Hwnw,	hono,	<i>that.</i>
Trwsogl,	troesgl,	<i>clumsy.</i>			

(b) By changing *y* into *e*.

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>		<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	
Brych,	brech,	<i>freckled.</i>	Hyll,	hell,	<i>frightful.</i>
Chwyrn,	chwern,	<i>rapid.</i>	Llym,	llem,	<i>sharp.</i>
Gwyp,	gwemp,	<i>splendid.</i>	Syth,	seth,	<i>erect.</i>
Gwyn,	gwen,	<i>white.</i>	Sych,	sech,	<i>dry.</i>
Gwydn,	gwedn,	<i>tough.</i>	Tyn,	ten,	<i>tight.</i>
Gwyrdd,	gwerdd,	<i>green.</i>			

138. "These adjectives with gender [formed by vowel inflections] lose that characteristic when they take the plural form, or have any of the terminations by which they become derivative; and by losing such a characteristic they retain the form under which they denote the masculine gender⁴."

Careg wen, *a white stone*, pl. ceryg *gwynion*, not ceryg *gwenion*.

139. **Mutation of consonants.** If an adjective, beginning with any of the mutable consonants, follows a feminine noun singular, its gender is also indicated by changing the initial consonant into the middle sound.

Careg drom, *a heavy stone*, (rad. *trwm*).

Dynes dda, *a good woman*, (rad. *da*).

(a) If an adjective precede the noun, or if the noun be plural, no indication of gender is made by consonant mutations.

Trom gareg.

Ceryg trymion.

140. An adjective is said to be of *common gender*, when it can undergo no change whatever; i. e. when it does not contain a mutable *w* or *y*, or begin with one of the nine *mutable consonants*.

Gwr *hael*, *a liberal man*.

Bachgen *segur*, *an idle boy*.

Gwraig *hael*, *a liberal woman*.

Geneth *segur*, *an idle girl*.

NUMBER OF ADJECTIVES.

141. Some adjectives are susceptible of a plural number to agree with a plural noun or pronoun; others are used in the singular, even when the noun is plural (*Dynion duon*. *Dynion da*.)

⁴ *Dr. Pughe's Grammar*, p. 52.

142. The adjectives, which admit of being made plural, are mostly *primitives*; but sometimes *compounds* and *derivatives*.

143. The plural number is formed

a. By adding the syllable on or ion. [*On* is added to words ending in a *vowel*; *ion* to words ending in a *consonant*.]

Du, *black*, pl. duon.

Gwyn, *white*, pl. gwynion.

β. By changing a vowel or vowels.

Buan, *swift*, pl. buain.

Cadarn, *strong*, pl. cedyrn.

γ. By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding on or ion.

Garw, *rough*, pl. geirwon.

Tlawd, *poor*, pl. tlodion.

(*a*) The plural number is formed from the *masculine* gender, never from the *feminine*. Ceryg gwynion, not ceryg gwenion.

144. The vowels undergo the following changes in the formation of the plural number of adjectives.

A is changed into *ai* without the addition of a syllable; as

Bychan, bychain, *little*.

Buan, buain, *quick*.

Llydan, llydain, *wide*.

Byddar, byddair, *deaf*.

Ieuan, ieuaio, *young*.

Truan, truain, *miserable*.

A is changed into *ei* with or without the addition of a syllable; as,

Hardd, heirdd, *beautiful*.

Llall, lleill, *the other*.

Marw, meirw, *dead*.

Gwag, gweigion, *empty*.

Arall, ereill (or eraill), *another*.

A and *a* are respectively changed into *e* and *y*; as cadarn, cedyrn, *strong*.

A and *e* are respectively changed into *e* and *y*; as caled, celyd, *hard*.

Ae and *ai* are respectively changed into *ei* with the addition of a syllable; as

Llaes, lleision, *trailing*.

Main, meinion, *thin*.

W is changed into *y* with the addition of a syllable; as trwm, trymion, *heavy*.

Aw is changed into *o* with the addition of a syllable; as tlawd, tlodion, *poor*.

145. Some adjectives have two plural forms; as caled, pl. celyd or caledion; hardd, pl. heirdd or heirddion.

146. Most adjectives, however, have no plural forms, the singular number, as in English, being put in construction with nouns and pronouns of the plural number; as

Primitives: da, teg, glan, hagr, hen, iawn, &c. (Dynion *da*; rhesymau *teg*; rhianod *glan*.)

Compounds: hyglod, mawrbarch, hynaws, &c. (Gwyr *hyglod*.)

Derivatives: such as end with the suffixes *aid*, *aidd*, *gar*, *ig*, (not *edig*), *in*, *llyd* (or *lyd*), *adwy*, *fawr*, *llawn*, (or *lawn*.) (*Llanciau mynyddig*; *dynion clodfawr*.)

(a) But derivatives ending in *edig*, *og*, *ol*, and *us*, admit of a plural form when they are used substantively; as *dyagedigion*, *learned men*; *goludogion*, *wealthy persons*; *duwiolion*, *pious persons*; *anwybodusion*, *ignorant ones*. They sometimes take a pl. form, when in construction with nouns; as *nefolion leoedd*, *heavenly places*.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

147. There are in Welsh four degrees of comparison; the *positive*, the *equal*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

148. The *positive* is expressed by the adjective in its simple and absolute state; as *glan*, *fair*; *rhyfelgar*, *warlike*.

149. The *equal* denotes equality or admiration, and is expressed in English by *as*, *so*, or *how*, with the positive. It is formed *a* by suffixing *ed* to the positive (and to the comparative of some irregular adj.) with or without *cyn* (or *can**) going before; as *cyn laned*, *as fair*.

(a) Admiration is most frequently, and equality sometimes, expressed without *cyn*; as *wyned yw'r eira*!

b By placing *mor* before the positive; as *mor lan*, *as fair*.

(a) *Mor* is frequently found with *ed*; as *mor laned*; but some grammarians condemn this construction.

c It is sometimes expressed by the inseparable prefixes *cy*, *cyf*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*; as *cyhyd*, *cyfuwch*, *cymmaint*, *cynddrwg*, *cystal*.

150. The *comparative* expresses a greater degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing *ach* to the positive; as *glanach*, *fairer*; or by placing *mwy* or *llai* (more or less) before it; as *mwy rhyfelgar*, *more warlike*; *llai rhyfelgar*, *less warlike*.

151. The *superlative* denotes the greatest degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing *af* to the positive; as *glanaf*, *fairest*; or by putting *mwyaf* or *lleiaf* (most or least) before it: as *mwyaf rhyfelgar*, *most warlike*; *lleiaf rhyfelgar*, *least warlike*.

* Modern grammarians prefer *can* to *cyn*.

Examples.

<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Equal.</i>	<i>Comp.</i>	<i>Super.</i>
Byr, <i>short.</i>	byred ^t .	byrach.	byraf.
Mwyn, <i>kind.</i>	mwyned.	mwynach.	mwynaf.
Rhyfelgar, <i>warlike.</i>	mor rhyfelgar.	mwyr rhyfelgar.	mwyaſ rhyfelgar.
Cyffredin, <i>common.</i>	mor gyffredin.	llai cyffredin.	lleiaſ cyffredin.

(a) When *g, b, d*, are the final letters of the positive, they are respectively changed into *c, p, t*, in the *equal, comp.* and *super.* degrees: as,

Teg, <i>fine.</i>	teced.	tecach.	tecaf.
Gwlyb, <i>wet.</i>	gwlyped.	gwlypach.	gwlypaf.
Rhad, <i>cheap.</i>	rhaed.	rhaſach.	rhaſaf.

(b) When *ai, aw, w*, occur in the last syllable of the positive, they are respectively changed into *ei, o, y*, in the other degrees; as, *main*, *meined*; *tlawd*, *tloted*; *llwm*, *llymed*.

152. Some adjectives are compared irregularly.

Those that are printed in *Italics* may also be compared regularly (e. g. *hawdd, hawdded, hawddach, hawddaf*); but the irregular forms are usually preferred by good writers.

<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Equal.</i>	<i>Comp.</i>	<i>Super.</i>
Da, <i>good.</i>	däed, cystal.	gwell.	goreu.
Buan or Clau } <i>quick.</i>	cynted.	cynt.	cyntaf.
Agos, <i>near.</i>	nesed.	nes.	nesaf.
Bach or Bychan } <i>little.</i>	lleied.	llai.	lleiaſ.
Drwg, <i>bad.</i>	cynddrwg, gwaeth- ed, dryced.	gwaeth.	gwaethaf.
Hawdd, <i>easy.</i>	hawsed.	haws.	hawsaf.
Hen, <i>old.</i>	hyned.	hŷn, hynach.	hynaf.
Hir, <i>long.</i>	cyhyd.	hwy.	hwyaf.
Ieuanc, <i>young.</i>	ieuenged.	iau.	ieuaf.
Isel, <i>low.</i>	ised.	is.	isaf.
Llawer, <i>much,</i> <i>many.</i>	cymmaint, cynnifer.	mwyr.	mwyaſ.
Llydan, <i>wide.</i>	lleted.	lletach, (lled.)	lletaf.
Mawr, <i>great.</i>	cymmaint.	mwyr.	mwyaſ.
Uchel, <i>high.</i>	uched, uwched, cyfuwch.	wchu, (uch.)	uchaf, uwchaf.
Diwedd, <i>an end.</i>			diweddaſ, <i>last.</i>
Blaen, <i>a point.</i>			blaenaf, <i>foremost.</i>
Ol, <i>the hinder part.</i>			olaſ, <i>last.</i>
Pen, <i>the head.</i>			penaf, <i>chief.</i>
		Trech, <i>superior</i>	trechaf,
			Eithaf, <i>furthest</i>

^t Or *cyn fyred*, and *mor fyr*.

^s *Buan* in North Wales; *clau* in South Wales.

NUMERALS.

153. Numerals are partly adjectives, partly adverbs.

154. The cardinal numbers are *un, dau, tri, &c.* The first ten and the numbers twenty, hundred, thousand, and a few others, are expressed respectively by radical words: the others are formed either by simply uniting two or more numerals, as *trigain=tri ugain*, three score; or by the aid of the prep. *ar* (upon), or the conj. *a, ac* (and); as *un-arddeg=one over ten, 11; pump a deugain=five and forty, 45.*

(a.) The cardinals have no pl. number, except when (as in English) they are used substantively. *Degau, tens; ngeiniau, scores; cannoedd, hundreds.*

'*Dau, tri, pedwar*, have *dwyr, tair, pedair* for the feminine gender, which form they assume in all their combinations, when used with fem. nouns.' *Tair dynes; tair dynes ar ddeg.*

155. The ordinals are *cyntaf, ail, trydydd, pummed, &c.* which, with the exception of the first four, are formed by suffixing *ed* or *fed* to the cardinals; as *chweched, seithfed.*

(a) The ordinals have no plural number, and no distinction of gender, except *trydydd* and *pedwerydd*, which make *trydedd* and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

156. The adverbial numerals answering to the question *how many times?* are made by affixing to any proposed numeral the word *gwaith*, time (softened *waith*), or *tro*, a turn (softened *dro*). *Pumwaith, five times; pumtro, five turns or times.* [*Gwaith* is the more usual.]

157. Cardinals, (one, &c.)	Ordinals, (first, &c.)	Numeral adverbs, (once, &c.)
1. Un.	Cyntaf, unfed ^b .	Unwaith, untro, &c.
2. Dau, f. dwyr.	Ail, eilfed; deufed, f. dwyfed.	Dwywaith.
3. Tri, f. tair.	Trydydd, f. try- dedd.	
4. Pedwar, f. pedair.	Pedwerydd, f. pedwaredd.	Pedergwaith.
5. Pump, pum'.	Pummed.	Pumwaith.

^b Unfed is used in conjunction with another numeral: *unfed ar ddeg, 11th; unfed ar bymtheg, 16th.*

6. Chwech, chwe'.	Chweched, chwechfed. }	Chwegwaith.
7. Saith.	Seithfed.	Seithwaith.
8. Wyth.	Wythfed.	Wythwaith.
9. Naw.	Nawfed.	Nawgwaith.
10. Deg.	Degfed.	Dengwaith.
11. Un-ar-ddeg.	Unfed-ar-ddeg.	Unwaith-ar-ddeg.
12. Deuddeg, (for deu-ar-ddeg.) }	Deuddegfed.	Deuddengwaith.
13. Tri (f. tair) ar- ddeg. }	Trydydd (f. try- dedd)-ar-ddeg. }	Teirgwaith-ar- ddeg.
14. Pedwar (f. pe- dair)-ar-ddeg. }	Pedwerydd - (f. pedwaredd)- ar-ddeg. }	Pedeirgwaith-ar- ddeg.
15. Pymtheg (for pump ar ddeg.) }	Pymthegfed.	Pymthengwaith.
16. Un-ar-bymtheg.	Unfed-ar-bym- theg. }	Unwaith-ar-bym- theg.
17. Dau (f. dwy) } -ar-bymtheg. }	Ail or eilfed-ar- bymtheg. } Deufed (f. dwy- fed) -ar-bym- theg. }	Dwywaith-ar- bymtheg, &c.
18. Tri (f. tair)- ar-bymtheg, } Deunaw. }	Trydydd (f. try- dedd)-ar-bym- theg, Deunaw- fed. }	Teirgwaith-ar- bymtheg.
19. Pedwar (f. pe- dair)-ar-bym- theg. }	Pedwerydd (f. pedwaredd)- ar-bymtheg. }	Pedair-gwaith-ar- bymtheg.
20. Ugain.	Ugeinfed.	Ugeinwaith
30. Deg-ar-ugain.	Degfed - ar - u- gain. }	Dengwaith-ar- ugain.
40. Deugain.	Deugeinfed.	Deugeinwaith.
50. Deg-a-deugain.	Degfed-a-deu- gain. }	Dengwaith-a- deugain.
60. Trigain (or tri- ugain. }	Trigeinfed.	Trigeinwaith.
80. Pedwar ugain.	Pedwar-ugeinfed.	Pedwar-ugein- waith.

100. Cant, can'	Canfed.	Canwaith.
200. Deugant.	Deuganfed.	Deuganwaith.
1000. Mil.	Milfed.	Milwaith.
2000. Dwyfil.	Dwyfilfed.	Dwyfilwaith, &c.

158. The ordinals have often, like the cardinal numbers, *gwaith* or *tro* put after them, *gwaith* taking the middle, and *tro* the radical sound: as *y seithfed waith*; *y seithfed tro*.

159. When the *names of the objects numbered* are joined to periphrastic numerals, they usually take their place immediately after the first-mentioned numeral: thus,

23 *men*: *Tri dyn ar ugain*=three men over twenty.

The 30th day: *Y degfed dydd ar ugain*=the tenth day over twenty.

PRONOUNS.

160. Pronouns are divided into *Personal*, *Demonstrative*, *Relative*, *Interrogative*, *Possessive*, and *Indefinite*.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

161. The Welsh language has personal pronouns in great variety of forms, which were designed in order to speak of a person or thing with a less or greater degree of emphasis. Thus when no great emphasis was to be laid on the pronoun, the simple form *mi* &c. would be employed; as '*mi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pronoun required to be marked with emphasis, the emphasis would be expressed by doubling the simple form: thus, *myfi*=*mi mi*; as '*myfi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pron. was to be conjoined, or set in opposition to a word in the preceding clause, this was done by suffixing the word *tau* (= *tuus*, too, also) to the simple form: thus we have *minnau*, *tithau*, fr. *mi-tau*, *ti-tau*; as '*minnau a ddeuaf*,' I also will come. When emphasis and conjunction were to be expressed in the same pronoun, the simple form would be prefixed to that which expressed conjunction or opposition; thus *myfinnau*, *tydithau*, *efyntau*, are compounded of *mi-minnau*, *ti-tithau*, *ef-yntau*.

Observ. At present, however, the distinction is not strictly observed between '*the simple*,' and '*the emphatic*,' and between '*the conjunctive*,' and '*the emphatic and conjunctive*.'

162. (a) *Simple.* (*I, thou, he, &c.*)

- | | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. Mi (mid. fi) i. | 1. Ni. |
| 2. Ti (m. di, asp. thi). | 2. Chwi. |
| 3. { E, ef, fe, o, fo, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwy, hwynt, (nhw, nhwy.) |
| { Hi, <i>fem.</i> | |

163. (b) *Emphatic.* (*I, thou, he, &c.*)

- | | |
|---------------------------------|----------------|
| 1. Myfi, (m. fyfi). | 1. Nyni. |
| 2. Tydi, (m. dydi, asp. thydi). | 2. Chwydchi. |
| 3. { Efe, efo, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwynt, hwy. |
| { Hyhi, <i>fem.</i> | |

164. (c) *Conjunctive.* (*I also, but I, I on the other hand, &c.*)

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| 1. Minnau (m. finnau) innau. | 1. Ninnau. |
| 2. Tithau (m. dithau, asp. thithau.) | 2. Chwithau. |
| 3. { Yntau, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwyttau, hwyntau (nhwttau, nhwytau). |
| { Hithau, <i>fem.</i> | |

165. (d) *Emphatic and conjunctive.* (*I also indeed, &c.*)

- | | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. Myfinnau. | 1. Nyninnau, |
| 2. Tydithau. | 2. Chwydchithau. |
| 3. { Efyntau, <i>mas.</i> | 3. borrow Hwyttau. |
| { Hyhithau, <i>fem.</i> | |

(a) Some of these pronouns suffer an elision when preceded by the prep. *i*; as *im'* for *i mi*; *it'* for *iti*; *in'* for *i ni*; and *iwch* is found for *i chwi*.

(b) *Of me, of thee, of us, &c.* will not be expressed in Welsh by *o fi, o di, o ni, &c.* but by the following form, which Dr. J. D. Rhys considers the genitive of the personal pronouns¹.

- | | |
|---------------------|----------------------|
| 1. O honof=of me. | 1. O honom=of us. |
| 2. O honot=of thee. | 2. O honoch=of you. |
| 3. { O hono=of him. | 3. O honynt=of them. |
| { O honi=of her. | |

Or, *o hanof, o hanot, &c.* where the root is more clearly seen. *Hanu* is to proceed from: hence *hanof*=proceeding from me.

166. Reflexive pronouns are formed by adding, to the poss. pron., *hun*, or *hunan*, self; *hun* or *hunain*, selves.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Fy hun or hunan, <i>myself.</i> | 1. Ein hun or hunain, <i>ourselves.</i> |
| 2. Dy hun or hunan, <i>thyself</i> | 2. Eich hun or hunain, <i>yourselves.</i> |
| 3. Ei hun or hunan, <i>himself, &c.</i> | 3. Eu hun or hunain, <i>themselves.</i> |

¹ Grammar, p. 74.

167. Reciprocal pronouns are formed by adding *gilydd* = one another, to the plural of the possessive.

First pers. ein gilydd : *second pers.* eich gilydd ; *third pers.* eu gilydd.

168. "*One another* is expressed also by *y naill y llall* = the one, the other : in this case two distinct persons or parties are spoken of. Hwy a laddant y naill y llall, *they will kill one another*^k."

169. Inseparable pronouns are so called, because they are united to verbs and prepositions to indicate the person and number intended to be expressed : thus, *caraf* is compounded of *car* and *fi* ; *ataf* of *at* and *fi*.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

170. The demonstrative pronouns of the Welsh language are divided into six classes, and "unake a discrimination of persons and situation, for which the English *this* and *that* are not equivalent^l."

171.		Y rhai hyn or yma	} <i>these.</i>
1st class.	Hwn, m.	(c. y rhai'n.) m.	
	Hon, f.	and f.	
	Hyn, n.	Hyn, y rhai hyn or yma (c. y rhai'n.) n.	

172.		Y rhai hyn or yma. m.	} <i>these here.</i>
2d class.	Hwnyma, m.	Y rhai hyn or yma. f.	
	Honyma, f.	Hynyma, y rhai hyn or yma. n.	
	Hynyma, n.		

173.			} Y rhai yma (or hyna), <i>those there.</i>
3d class.	Hwna, m.	} <i>that there.</i>	
	Hona, f.		
	Hyna, n.		

"Speaking of the second person, or of an object under cognizance."

^k T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

^l Dr. Pughe.

174.

4th class. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Hwnyna, m.} \\ \text{Honyna, f.} \\ \text{Hynyna, n.} \end{array} \right\} \text{that there.} \left\{ \text{Y rhai hynyna, those there.}$

"Speaking of the second person, or of an object near or present."

175.

5th class. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Hwnacw, m.} \\ \text{Honacw, f.} \\ \text{Hynacw, n.} \end{array} \right\} \text{that yonder.} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Y rhai hynacw or acw, those} \\ \text{yonder.} \end{array} \right.$

176.

6th class.	Hwnw, m.	} <i>that (out of sight.)</i> {	Y rhai hyny (c. y
	Hono, f.		rhē'ny), <i>those (out</i>
	Hyny, n.		<i>of sight.)</i>

"Speaking of the third person, that is distant, or not under cognizance."

(a) The words *yma*, *yna*, *acw*, are strictly adverbs of place, but are regularly used as demonstrative pronouns. *Oco* and *onco* are used for *acw* and *hwnacw* in the colloquial language of South Wales.

177. Demonstrative pronouns, when put in construction with substantives, follow them, an article always preceding. [Order: art. subs. pron.]

Y dyn hwn or yma=*this man*. Y dynion hyn or yma=*these men*.
Y ddynes hon or yma=*this woman*. Y gwraeddd hyn or yma=
these women.

Y peth hyn or yma=*this thing*. Y pethau hyn or yma=*these things*.

Y dyn yna (or hwna) &c.=*that man*. Y dynion yna &c.=*those men*.

Y dyn acw &c.=that man. Y dynion acw &c.=those men.

Y dyn hwnw &c.=that man. Y dynion hynny &c.=those men.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

178. The pronouns *yr hun*, *yr hon*, &c. are varied to denote gender and number; some are varied to denote number only; and others have no variation at all.

179. S. Yr hwn, *m. he that, who,*
whose, whom, &c.
 Yr hon, *f. she, that, who, &c.* } Pl. Y rhai.

Yr hyn, n. that which, which, &c. Pl. Y rhai; yr hyn.

S. Pa un (= *which one*), *who, which, &c.* Pl. Pa rai
(= *which ones,*) *who, which, &c.*

S. Y neb, yr un, *whosoever*, &c. Pl. Y sawl^m, *whosoever*, &c.

Ag and a'r=*who, which, that*, are indeclinable.

Pwybynag=*whosoever*, is both mas. and fem., and sing. and plural.

Pa . . bynag=*what . . soever*, may be of any gender and number, according to the word inserted between *pa* and *bynag*; as,

S. Pa ddyn bynag.

Pa ferch bynag.

Pa beth bynag.

Pl. Pa ddynion bynag.

Pa ferched bynag.

Pa bethau bynag.

(a) Some grammarians consider 'a' as a relative pronoun; as in the sentence "ti yw y ferch a garaf," thou art the maid I love. But as the writer is convinced that *a* in such sentences is nothing else than the auxiliary adverb, which in affirmative clauses is placed before the verb when the nom. or the objective precedes, it has been thought proper to deny it a place among relative pronouns.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

180. The interrogative pronouns are *pwy*^a and *pa*^a (and formerly *py*^a) for both numbers.

181. *Pwy* (*what man or woman, who*.) is both mas. and fem., and being itself a substantive pronoun, it should not, according to most grammarians, be joined to a noun.

182. *Pa* (*what*) is an adjective pronoun, and for the most part is followed by a noun or a substantive word. *Pa ddyn?* *Pa un?* *Pa rai?*

(a) When *pwy* and *pa* are accompanied by *bynag*=*conque*, they form indefinite relatives. [See above, §. 179.]

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

183. 1. *Fy*^{*}, *ym*, *my*

2. *Dy*, *yth*, *thy*.

3. *Ei*, *his*, *hers*, *its*.

Ein, *our*.

Eich, *your*.

Eu, *their*.

^m *Y sawl* is sometimes considered as singular: '*Y sawl ni rodia, dedwydd yw.*' *Edm. Prys*. "*Fod yn rhaid i'r sawl a chwenychai wrthladd awdurdod, gymmeryd y baich arno ei hun.*" *Ed. Samuel*.

^a Cf. *pwy*=*quis*; *pa*, *py*=*πῃ*, *quâ*.

* The radical form *my* is obsolete.

184. 1. Eiddof, *mine*. Eiddom, *ours*.
 2. Eiddot, *thine*. Eiddoch, *yours*.
 3. { Eiddo, *his*. Eiddynt, *theirs*.
 { Eiddi, *hers*.

185. *Ma* (=meus) my, and *tau* (=tuus) thy, are obsolete.

186. *Ill* (probably = *illi*) is joined to numerals, and most commonly to no more than two or three persons. "Aethant yno *ill* dau," they both went there. So *ill tri* or *trioedd*, they three.

(a) When *ym*, *yth*, *ei*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*, come after *a*, *e*, *i*, *y*, *fe*, *ni*, *na*, *pe*, *mo*, *tua*, *gyda*, and sometimes after other words ending with a vowel, they are abbreviated:

'm=ym; 'th=yth; 'i=ei; 'n=ein; 'ch=eich; 'u=eu.

Mi a'm tad; ti a'th dad; efe a'i dad.

Nyni a'n tad; ohwyhwi a'ch tad; hwynt-hwy a'u tad.

(b) "I'w." When *ei* singular and *eu* pl. are preceded by *i*, they are changed into *w*: *i'w=i ei*, to his; *i'w=i eu*, to their. Aeth *i'w* dy; aethant *i'w* tai.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS (OR NUMERALS.)

187. The following are termed *indefinite pronouns* or *numerals*†.

Ambell, <i>some few</i> .	Ychydig, <i>few, little</i> .	Rhai, <i>some</i> . Sawl, <i>many</i> . (Pa sawl gwaith? <i>how many times?</i> Y sawl, <i>whosoever</i> .)
Amryw { <i>several</i> . Amrai {	Peth, <i>some</i> .	
Arall (pl. ereill) <i>another</i> .	Y naill, <i>the one</i> .	Un, <i>any</i> ; yr un; <i>the same</i> .
Cyfrw { <i>such</i> . Y fath {	Y llall (pl. lleill) <i>the other</i> .	Unrhyw, <i>any</i> ; <i>the same</i> .
Dim, <i>no</i> ; <i>any</i> .	Pob, <i>every</i> .	Neb, <i>nobody</i> ; <i>any body</i> .
Holl, <i>all</i> .	Pawb, <i>all</i> .	
Llawer, <i>many, much</i> .	Rhyw, <i>some</i> .	

188. *Arall* and *oll* follow the nouns which they qualify; the others precede.

189. The following are accompanied by a noun or substantive word: *pob*, *ambell*, *rhyw*, *unrhyw* (any) *holl*.

190. These admit of being employed with or without a noun: *amryw*, *amrai*, *cyfrw*, *y fath*, *llawer*, *oll*, *rhai*, *un*, *yr un*, *unrhyw* (the same), *ychydig*, *y naill*, *arall*, *sawl*, *dim*, *peth*, *neb*.

† They are called by some, *adjective pronouns*.

Compounds: hyglod, mawrbarch, hynaws, &c. (Gwyr *hyglod*.)

Derivatives: such as end with the suffixes *aid*, *aidd*, *gar*, *ig*, (not *edig*), *in*, *llyd* (or *tyd*), *adwy*, *fawr*, *llawn*, (or *lawn*.) (*Llanciau mynyddig*; *dynion clodfawr*.)

(a) But derivatives ending in *edig*, *og*, *ol*, and *us*, admit of a plural form when they are used substantively; as *dyagedigion*, *learned men*; *goludogion*, *wealthy persons*; *duwiolion*, *pious persons*; *anwybodusion*, *ignorant ones*. They sometimes take a pl. form, when in construction with nouns; as *nefolion leoedd*, *heavenly places*.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

147. There are in Welsh four degrees of comparison; the *positive*, the *equal*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

148. The *positive* is expressed by the adjective in its simple and absolute state; as *glan*, *fair*; *rhyfelgar*, *warlike*.

149. The *equal* denotes equality or admiration, and is expressed in English by *as*, *so*, or *how*, with the positive. It is formed *a* by suffixing *ed* to the positive (and to the comparative of some irregular adj.) with or without *cyn* (or *can**) going before; as *cyn laned*, *as fair*.

(a) Admiration is most frequently, and equality sometimes, expressed without *cyn*; as *wyned yw'r eira*!

b By placing *mor* before the positive; as *mor lan*, *as fair*.

(a) *Mor* is frequently found with *ed*; as *mor laned*; but some grammarians condemn this construction.

c It is sometimes expressed by the inseparable prefixes *cy*, *cyf*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*; as *cyhyd*, *cyfuwch*, *cymmaint*; *cynddrwg*, *crystal*.

150. The *comparative* expresses a greater degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing *ach* to the positive; as *glanach*, *fairer*; or by placing *mwy* or *llai* (more or less) before it; as *mwy rhyfelgar*, *more warlike*; *llai rhyfelgar*, *less warlike*.

151. The *superlative* denotes the greatest degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing *af* to the positive; as *glanaf*, *fairest*; or by putting *mwyaf* or *lleiaf* (most or least) before it: as *mwyaf rhyfelgar*, *most warlike*; *lleiaf rhyfelgar*, *least warlike*.

* Modern grammarians prefer *can* to *cyn*.

Examples.

<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Equal.</i>	<i>Comp.</i>	<i>Super.</i>
Byr, <i>short.</i>	byred [†] .	byrach.	byraf.
Mwyn, <i>kind.</i>	mwyned.	mwynach.	mwynaf.
Rhyfelgar, <i>warlike.</i>	mor rhyfelgar.	mwyr rhyfelgar.	mwyaſ rhyfelgar.
Cyffredin, <i>common.</i>	mor gyffredin.	llai cyffredin.	lleiaſ cyffredin.

(a) When *g, b, d*, are the final letters of the positive, they are respectively changed into *c, p, t*, in the *equal, comp.* and *super.* degrees: as,

Teg, <i>fine.</i>	teced.	tecach.	tecaf.
Gwlyb, <i>wet.</i>	gwlyped.	gwlypach.	gwlypaf.
Rhad, <i>cheap.</i>	rhaſed.	rhaſach.	rhaſaf.

(b) When *ai, aw, w*, occur in the last syllable of the positive, they are respectively changed into *ei, o, y*, in the other degrees; as, *main*, *meined*; *clawd*, *cloted*; *llwm*, *llymed*.

152. Some adjectives are compared irregularly.

☞ Those that are printed in *Italics* may also be compared regularly (e. g. *hawdd*, *hawdded*, *hawddach*, *hawddaf*); but the irregular forms are usually preferred by good writers.

<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Equal.</i>	<i>Comp.</i>	<i>Super.</i>
Da, <i>good.</i>	däed, <i>cystal.</i>	gwell.	goreu.
Buan or Clau } <i>quick.</i>	cynted.	cynt.	cyntaf.
Agos, <i>near.</i>	nesed.	nes.	nesaf.
Bach or Bychan } <i>little.</i>	lleied.	llai.	lleiaſ.
Drwg, <i>bad.</i>	cynddrwg, gwaeth- ed, dryoed.	gwaeth.	gwaethaf.
Hawdd, <i>easy.</i>	hawsed.	haws.	hawsaf.
Hen, <i>old.</i>	hyned.	hŷn, hynach.	hynaf.
Hir, <i>long.</i>	cyhyd.	hwy.	hwyaf.
Ieuanc, <i>young.</i>	ieuenged.	iau.	ieuaf.
Iſel, <i>low.</i>	ised.	is.	isaf.
Llawer, <i>much,</i> many.	cymmaint, cynnifer.	mwyr.	mwyaſ.
Llydan, <i>wide.</i>	lleted.	lletach, (lled.)	lletaf.
Mawr, <i>great.</i>	cymmaint.	mwyr.	mwyaſ.
Uchel, <i>high.</i>	uched, uwched, cyfuwch.	wchu, (uch.)	uchaf, uwchaf.
Diwedd, <i>an end.</i>			diweddaſ, <i>last.</i>
Blaen, <i>a point.</i>			blaenaſ, <i>foremost.</i>
Ol, <i>the hinder part.</i>			olaſ, <i>last.</i>
Pen, <i>the head.</i>			penaſ, <i>chief.</i>
		Trech, <i>superior</i>	trechaf,
			Eithaf, <i>furthest</i>

[†] Or *cyn fyred*, and *mor fyr*.

[‡] *Buan* in North Wales; *clau* in South Wales.

NUMERALS.

153. Numerals are partly adjectives, partly adverbs.

154. The cardinal numbers are *un*, *dau*, *tri*, &c. The first ten and the numbers twenty, hundred, thousand, and a few others, are expressed respectively by radical words: the others are formed either by simply uniting two or more numerals, as *trigain*=*tri ugain*, three score; or by the aid of the prep. *ar* (upon), or the conj. *a*, *ac* (and); as *un-ar-ddeg*=one over ten, 11; *pump a deugain*=five and forty, 45.

(a.) The cardinals have no pl. number, except when (as in English) they are used substantively. *Degau*, *tens*; *ugeiniau*, *scores*; *canoedd*, *hundreds*.

'*Dau*, *tri*, *pedwar*, have *dwyr*, *tair*, *pedair* for the feminine gender, which form they assume in all their combinations, when used with fem. nouns.' *Tair dynes*; *tair dynes ar ddeg*.

155. The ordinals are *cyntaf*, *ail*, *trydydd*, *pumed*, &c. which, with the exception of the first four, are formed by suffixing *ed* or *fed* to the cardinals; as *chweched*, *seithfed*.

(a) The ordinals have no plural number, and no distinction of gender, except *trydydd* and *pedwerydd*, which make *trydedd* and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

156. The adverbial numerals answering to the question *how many times?* are made by affixing to any proposed numeral the word *gwaith*, time (softened *waith*), or *tro*, a turn (softened *dro*). *Pumwaith*, *five times*; *pumtro*, *five turns* or *times*. [*Gwaith* is the more usual.]

157. Cardinals, (one, &c.)	Ordinals, (first, &c.)	Numeral adverbs, (once, &c.)
1. Un.	Cyntaf, unfed ^b .	Unwaith, untro, &c.
2. Dau, f. dwyr.	Ail, eilfed; deufed, f. dwyfed.	Dwywaith.
3. Tri, f. tair.	Trydydd, f. try- dedd.	
4. Pedwar, f. pedair.	Pedwerydd, f. pedwaredd.	Pedergwaith.
5. Pump, pum'.	Pumed.	Pumwaith.

^b Unfed is used in conjunction with another numeral: *unfed ar ddeg*, 11th; *unfed ar bymtheg*, 16th.

6. Chwech, chwe'.	Chweched, chwechfed. }	Chwegwaith.
7. Saith.	Seithfed.	Seithwaith.
8. Wyth.	Wythfed.	Wythwaith.
9. Naw.	Nawfed.	Nawgwaith.
10. Deg.	Degfed.	Dengwaith.
11. Un-ar-ddeg.	Unfed-ar-ddeg.	Unwaith-ar-ddeg.
12. Deuddeg, (for deu-ar-ddeg.) }	Deuddegfed.	Deuddengwaith.
13. Tri (f. tair) ar- ddeg. }	Trydydd (f. try- dedd)-ar-ddeg. }	Teirgwaith-ar- ddeg.
14. Pedwar (f. pe- dair)-ar-ddeg. }	Pedwerydd - (f. pedwaredd)- ar-ddeg. }	Pedeirgwaith-ar- ddeg.
15. Pymtheg (for pump ar ddeg.) }	Pymthegfed.	Pymthengwaith.
16. Un-ar-bymtheg.	Unfed-ar-bym- theg. }	Unwaith-ar-bym- theg.
17. Dau (f. dwy) }	Ail or eilfed-ar- bymtheg. }	Dwywaith-ar- bymtheg, &c.
-ar-bymtheg. }	Deufed (f. dwy- fed) -ar-bym- theg. }	
18. Tri (f. tair)- ar-bymtheg, }	Trydydd (f. try- dedd)-ar-bym- theg, Deunaw- fed. }	Teirgwaith-ar- bymtheg.
19. Pedwar (f. pe- dair)-ar-bym- theg. }	Pedwerydd (f. pedwaredd)- ar-bymtheg. }	Pedair-gwaith-ar- bymtheg.
20. Ugain.	Ugeinfed.	Ugeinwaith
30. Deg-ar-ugain.	Degfed - ar - u- gain. }	Dengwaith-ar- ugain.
40. Deugain.	Deugeinfed.	Deugeinwaith.
50. Deg-a-deugain.	Degfed-a-deu- gain. }	Dengwaith-a- deugain.
60. Trigain (or tri- ugain. }	Trigeinfed.	Trigeinwaith.
80. Pedwar ugain.	Pedwar-ugeinfed.	Pedwar-ugein- waith.

100. Cant, can'	Canfed.	Canwaith.
200. Deugant.	Deuganfed.	Deuganwaith.
1000. Mil.	Milfed.	Milwaith.
2000. Dwyfil.	Dwyfilfed.	Dwyfilwaith, &c.

158. The ordinals have often, like the cardinal numbers, *gwaith* or *tro* put after them, *gwaith* taking the middle, and *tro* the radical sound: as *y seithfed waith*; *y seithfed tro*.

159. When the *names of the objects numbered* are joined to periphrastic numerals, they usually take their place immediately after the first-mentioned numeral: thus,

23 *men*: *Tri dyn ar ugain*=three men over twenty.

The 30th day: *Y degfed dydd ar ugain*=the tenth day over twenty.

PRONOUNS.

160. Pronouns are divided into *Personal, Demonstrative, Relative, Interrogative, Possessive, and Indefinite*.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

161. The Welsh language has personal pronouns in great variety of forms, which were designed in order to speak of a person or thing with a less or greater degree of emphasis. Thus when no great emphasis was to be laid on the pronoun, the simple form *mi* &c. would be employed; as '*mi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pronoun required to be marked with emphasis, the emphasis would be expressed by doubling the simple form: thus, *myfi*=*mi mi*; as '*myfi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pron. was to be conjoined, or set in opposition to a word in the preceding clause, this was done by suffixing the word *tau* (= *tus*, too, also) to the simple form: thus we have *minnau*, *tithau*, fr. *mi-tau*, *ti-tau*; as '*minnau a ddeuaf*,' I also will come. When emphasis and conjunction were to be expressed in the same pronoun, the simple form would be prefixed to that which expressed conjunction or opposition; thus *myfinnau*, *tydithau*, *efyntau*, are compounded of *mi-minnau*, *ti-tithau*, *ef-yntau*.

Observ. At present, however, the distinction is not strictly observed between '*the simple*,' and '*the emphatic*,' and between '*the conjunctive*,' and '*the emphatic and conjunctive*.'

162. (a) *Simple.* (*I, thou, he, &c.*)

- | | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. Mi (mid. fi) i. | 1. Ni. |
| 2. Ti (m. di, asp. thi). | 2. Chwi. |
| 3. { E, ef, fe, o, fo, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwyl, hwynt, (nhw, nhwy.) |
| { Hi, <i>fem.</i> | |

163. (b) *Emphatic.* (*I, thou, he, &c.*)

- | | |
|---------------------------------|----------------|
| 1. Myfi, (m. fyfi). | 1. Nyni. |
| 2. Tydi, (m. dydi, asp. thydi). | 2. Chwydhwyl. |
| 3. { Efe, efo, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwynt, hwy. |
| { Hyhi, <i>fem.</i> | |

164. (c) *Conjunctive.* (*I also, but I, I on the other hand, &c.*)

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. Minnau (m. finnau) innau. | 1. Ninnau. |
| 2. Tithau (m. dithau, asp. thithau.) | 2. Chwithau. |
| 3. { Yntau, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwylthau, hwynt- |
| { Hithau, <i>fem.</i> | tau (nhwylthau, nhwythau). |

165. (d) *Emphatic and conjunctive.* (*I also indeed, &c.*)

- | | |
|---------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Myfinnau. | 1. Nyninnau, |
| 2. Tydithau. | 2. Chwydhwylthau. |
| 3. { Efyntau, <i>mas.</i> | 3. borrow Hwylthau. |
| { Hyhithau, <i>fem.</i> | |

(a) Some of these pronouns suffer an elision when preceded by the prep. *i*; as *im'* for *i mi*; *i'* for *i ti*; *in'* for *i ni*; and *iwdh* is found for *i chwi*.

(b) *Of me, of thee, of us, &c.* will not be expressed in Welsh by *o fi, o di, o ni, &c.* but by the following form, which Dr. J. D. Rhys considers the genitive of the personal pronouns¹.

- | | |
|---------------------|----------------------|
| 1. O honof=of me. | 1. O honom=of us. |
| 2. O honot=of thee. | 2. O honoch=of you. |
| 3. { O hono=of him. | 3. O honynt=of them. |
| { O honi=of her. | |

Or, *o hanof, o hanot, &c.* where the root is more clearly seen. *Hanu* is to proceed from: hence *hanof*=proceeding from me.

166. Reflexive pronouns are formed by adding, to the poss. pron., *hun*, or *hunan*, self; *hun* or *hunain*, selves.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Fy hun or hunan, <i>myself.</i> | 1. Ein hun or hunain, <i>ourselves.</i> |
| 2. Dy hun or hunan, <i>thyself</i> | 2. Eich hun or hunain, <i>yourselves.</i> |
| 3. Eihun or hunan, <i>himself, &c.</i> | 3. Eu hun or hunain, <i>themselves.</i> |

¹ Grammar, p. 74.

167. Reciprocal pronouns are formed by adding *gilydd* = one another, to the plural of the possessive.

First pers. ein gilydd; *second pers.* eich gilydd; *third pers.* eu gilydd.

168. "One another is expressed also by *y naill y llall* = the one, the other: in this case two distinct persons or parties are spoken of. *Hwy a laddant y naill y llall, they will kill one another*^k."

169. Inseparable pronouns are so called, because they are united to verbs and prepositions to indicate the person and number intended to be expressed: thus, *caraf* is compounded of *car* and *fi*; *ataf* of *at* and *fi*.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

170. The demonstrative pronouns of the Welsh language are divided into six classes, and "make a discrimination of persons and situation, for which the English *this* and *that* are not equivalent^l."

171.			
1st class.	Hwn, m.	} <i>this.</i>	Y rhai hyn or yma
	Hon, f.		(c. y rhai'n.) m.
	Hyn, n.		and f.
			Hyn, y rhai hyn or yma (c. y rhai'n.) n.) } <i>these.</i>

172.			
2d class.	Hwnyma, m.	} <i>this here.</i>	Y rhai hyn or yma. m.
	Honyma, f.		Y rhai hyn or yma. f.
	Hynyma, n.		Hynyma, y rhai hyn or yma. n.)
			} <i>these here.</i>

173.			
3d class.	Hwna, m.	} <i>that there.</i>	} Y rhai yma (or hyna), <i>those there.</i>
	Hona, f.		
	Hyna, n.		

"Speaking of the second person, or of an object under cognizance."

^k T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

^l Dr. Pughe.

S. Y neb, yr un, *whosoever*, &c. Pl. Y sawl^m, *whosoever*, &c.

Ag and a'r=*who, which, that*, are indeclinable.

Pwybyneg=*whosoever*, is both mas. and fem., and sing. and plural.

Pa . . byneg=*what . . soever*, may be of any gender and number, according to the word inserted between *pa* and *byneg*; as,

S. Pa *ddyn* byneg.

Pa *ferch* byneg.

Pa *beth* byneg.

Pl. Pa *ddynion* byneg.

Pa *ferched* byneg.

Pa *bethau* byneg.

(a) Some grammarians consider 'a' as a relative pronoun; as in the sentence "ti yw y ferch a garaf," thou art the maid I love. But as the writer is convinced that *a* in such sentences is nothing else than the auxiliary adverb, which in affirmative clauses is placed before the verb when the nom. or the objective precedes, it has been thought proper to deny it a place among relative pronouns.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

180. The interrogative pronouns are *pwy*ⁿ and *pa*ⁿ (and formerly *py*ⁿ) for both numbers.

181. *Pwy* (*what man or woman, who*,) is both mas. and fem., and being itself a substantive pronoun, it should not, according to most grammarians, be joined to a noun.

182. *Pa* (*what*) is an adjective pronoun, and for the most part is followed by a noun or a substantive word. *Pa ddyn?* *Pa un?* *Pa rai?*

(a) When *pwy* and *pa* are accompanied by *byneg*=*conque*, they form indefinite relatives. [See above, §. 179.]

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

- | | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| 183. 1. <i>Fy</i> ^o , <i>ym</i> , <i>my</i> | <i>Ein</i> , <i>our</i> . |
| 2. <i>Dy</i> , <i>yth</i> , <i>thy</i> . | <i>Eich</i> , <i>your</i> . |
| 3. <i>Ei</i> , <i>his</i> , <i>hers</i> , <i>its</i> . | <i>Eu</i> , <i>their</i> . |

^m *Y sawl* is sometimes considered as singular: '*Y sawl ni roddia, dedwydd yw*.' *Edm. Prys*. "Fod yn rhaid i'r sawl a chwenychai wrthladd awdurdod, gymmeryd y baich arno ei hun." *Ed. Samuel*.

ⁿ Cf. *pwy*=*quis*; *pa*, *py*=*quæ*.

^o The radical form *my* is obsolete.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| 184. 1. Eiddof, <i>mine</i> . | Eiddom, <i>ours</i> . |
| 2. Eiddot, <i>thine</i> . | Eiddoch, <i>yours</i> . |
| 3. { Eiddo, <i>his</i> . | Eiddynt, <i>theirs</i> . |
| { Eiddi, <i>hers</i> . | |

185. *Mau* (=meus) my, and *tau* (=tuus) thy, are obsolete.

186. *Ill* (probably = *illi*) is joined to numerals, and most commonly to no more than two or three persons. "Aethant yno *ill* dau," they both went there. So *ill tri* or *trioedd*, they three.

(a) When *ym*, *yth*, *ei*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*, come after *a*, *o*, *i*, *y*, *fe*, *ni*, *na*, *pe*, *mo*, *tua*, *gyda*, and sometimes after other words ending with a vowel, they are abbreviated:

'm=*ym*; 'th=*yth*; 'i=*ei*; 'n=*ein*; 'ch=*eich*; 'u=*eu*.

Mi a'm tad; ti a'th dad; efe a'i dad.

Nyni a'n tad; chwychwi a'ch tad; hwynt-hwy a'u tad.

(b) "I'w." When *ei* singular and *eu* pl. are preceded by *i*, they are changed into *w*: *i'w*=*i ei*, to his; *i'w*=*i eu*, to their. Aeth *i'w* dy; aethant *i'w* tai.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS (OR NUMERALS.)

187. The following are termed *indefinite pronouns* or *numerals*^p.

Ambell, <i>some few</i> .	Ychydig, <i>few, little</i> .	Rhai, <i>some</i> . Sawl, <i>many</i> . (Pa sawl gwaith? <i>how many times?</i> Y sawl, <i>whosoever</i> .)
Amryw { <i>several</i> .	Peth, <i>some</i> .	
Amrai }		
Arall (pl. ereill) <i>another</i> .	Y naill, <i>the one</i> .	Un, <i>any</i> ; yr un; <i>the same</i> .
Cyfrw { <i>such</i> .	Y llall (pl. lleill) <i>the other</i> .	Umrhyw, <i>any</i> ; <i>the same</i> .
Y fath }		
Dim, <i>no</i> ; <i>any</i> .	Pob, <i>every</i> .	Neb, <i>nobody</i> ; <i>any body</i> .
Holl, <i>all</i> .	Pawb, <i>all</i> .	
Llawer, <i>many, much</i> .	Rhyw, <i>some</i> .	

188. *Arall* and *oll* follow the nouns which they qualify; the others precede.

189. The following are accompanied by a noun or substantive word: *pob*, *ambell*, *rhyw*, *unrhyw* (any) *holl*.

190. These admit of being employed with or without a noun: *amryw*, *amrai*, *cyfrw*, *y fath*, *llawer*, *oll*, *rhai*, *un*, *yr un*, *unrhyw* (the same), *ychydig*, *y naill*, *arall*, *sawl*, *dim*, *peth*, *neb*.

^p They are called by some, *adjective pronouns*.

191. *Pawb* and *y llall* (pl. *y lleill*) are never accompanied by a noun or substantive word.

192. *Dim*, *pob*, *llawer*, *un*, and *yr un* (mas.), *rhai*, *sawl*, and *peth*, govern the radical sound: the others govern the middle.

* * * For further observations, see *Syntax*.

VERBS.

193. Verbs are divided into *Active* and *Passive*. Active verbs are again divided into *Transitive* and *Intransitive*.

194. "A *transitive* verb expresses an action exerted upon some object;" as '*caraf y dyn*,' *I love the man*.

195. "An *intransitive* verb expresses an action or a state, which is not communicated from the agent to any other object;" as '*rhedaf*,' *I run*.

196. "A *passive transitive* verb denotes that its nominative is suffering or acted upon." It is formed from the active transitive by suffixing the passive terminations to the root of the verb: thus '*car-af*,' *I love*; passive, '*cer-ir fi*,' *I am loved*.

197. A *passive impersonal* verb is formed by adding the passive suffixes to the root of the intransitive: thus, '*rhed-af*,' *I run*; impers. *rhed-ir*, '*it is run*'; *men run*. It has not, strictly speaking, a nom. case, but *fe*, *fo*, *e*, frequently precede it in affirmative main clauses; as '*fe redir yn gyflym*.'

198. A *reflective* (or *middle*) verb denotes that an action is exerted by the agent upon himself. It is formed from transitive verbs by prefixing *ym*⁴ to them; as *golchi*, *to wash*, *ymolchi*, *to wash one's self*. [Cf. Gr. *λούω*, *I wash*; *λούομαι*, *I wash myself*: L. *fero*, *I bear*; *feror*, *I bear myself*.]

FORMATION OF THE MOODS.

199. The root of a verb is a word in its radical, unchanged form, without any termination added thereto, and it is most usually traced in the *infinitive mood*; the *third pers. sing. fut. of the indic.*; or the *second pers. sing. of the imperative*.

⁴ *Ym* is probably another form of the pron. *mi*, or cognate with the Greek *μου-ai*.

200. **The infinitive mood.** Many verbs are used in the infinitive without any addition of suffixes designative of that mood. Dangos, *to show*; ateb, *to answer*; son, *to mention*.

201. But, in general, certain endings, characteristic of the infinitive, are appended to the root-words; and, if the root-words contain mutable vowels, they for the most part undergo a change according to the system of vowel mutations. Dysg-u, *to learn*, fr. dysg; sef-yll, *to stand*, fr. saf.

202. Verbs are formed from *nouns*, sing. and pl., from *adjectives*, and occasionally from some other parts of speech. Caru, *to love*, fr. câr. Cyfiawnhâu, *to justify*, fr. cyfiawn.

Blodeuo, *to be in blossom*, fr. blodau. Unioni, *to straighten*, fr. uniawn.

203. The infinitive endings most frequently in vogue are *a*, *hâu*, (or *âu*) *i*, *o*, (or *aw*), *io* (or *iaw*), and *u*. Bwyta, bywhâu, tori, curo (or curaw), ceisio (or ceisiaw), rhanu.

204. The following infinitive endings do not occur so frequently: *ed*, *ied*, *ael*, *el*, *ain*, *ian*, *aeth*, *eg*, *w*, *eu*, *y*, *yll*, *yd*, *al*, *ial*, *ur*, *aur* (or *or*), *fan*, *ych*. Cerdded, ymddiried, gallael or gallel, llefain, ichian, marchogaeth, rhedeg, bwrw, maddeu, hely, sefyll, cymmyrd, arthal, nychial, gwneuthur, egor (or egawr), hedfan, chwennych.

205. *Observations.* (a) *O* and *io* are used in simple or historical language; *aw* and *iaw* in poetry and in nervous prose.

(b) *Hâu* (or *âu*) are generally attached to adjectives; as llawenhâu, fr. llawen, *cheerful*; iachâu, fr. iach, *healthy*.

(c) *I* and *u*. If the preceding syllable contains *o* or *oe*; or if it ends in *w*, the affix *i* is employed; as tori, ofni, lloni; poeni, poeri, oeri; twi, sylwi, meddwi. In other cases *u* is the common termination; as malu, pechu, baeddu, cysgu. But there are several exceptions (especially in *e*); as medi, rhegi, peri, geni, peagi, gwaeddi, gweini, crawni, cyflawni.

(d) The affix *a* generally signifies to *gather* or *collect*; as afaleua, *to gather apples*; gwlana, *to gather wool*; ceinioca, *to gather pence*.

(e) *Ain*, *ian*, *al*, *ial*, *fan*, imply *frequency*, or a *gradual* and *continued action*. Ochain, ichian, arthal, naddial, hedfan. *F* is sometimes prefixed to *ain*; as wylo-fain, cwyno-fain.

206. **Finite moods.** The finite moods are formed from the infinitive, according to the following rules.

207. *a.* When verbs have no infinitive endings, and contain no mutable vowels (*a*, *ai*, *aw*, *w*), the finite moods are

* *Hâu* and *âu* are also met with. Cyflawnhâu, cyflawnâu.

formed simply by adding to the infinitive the various terminations characterizing them; as *ateb*, *ateb-af*, *ateb-wn*, *ateb-ais*.

208. If the infinitive contains a mutable vowel, that vowel is usually changed into another; as *hebrwng*, *hebryng-af*, *hebryngwn*, *hebryngais*.

209. β . When verbs have infinitive endings, most of these are struck off at the accession of the finite suffixes; as *rheg-eg*, *rhed-af*, *rhed-wn*, *rhed-ais*. And some of the prepared roots of the infinitive (or radices of formation), if they have undergone a change with respect to their vowels, re-assume their radical form; as *sef-yll* (rad. form *saf*) to stand, *saf-af*, *saf-wn*.

210. In addition to the two preceding rules, the following remarks are offered as affording further explanations on the formation of the finite moods.

211. The following endings of the infinitive are generally cut off in the formation of the finite moods: *i*, *o*, (or *aw*), *u*, *a*, *ed*, *ain*, *aeth*, *eg*, *yll*, *yd*, *ur*. *Tor-i cur-o* (or *cur-aw*), *tal-u*, *ceinioc-a clyw-ed*, *llef-ain*, *marchog-aeth*, *rhed-eg*, *sef-yll*, *gochel-yd*, *gwneuth-ur*.

(a) *Taraw*, *gadaw*, *addaw*, *gurandaw*^a, and their compounds, as *ymdaraw*, &c. retain "*aw*" in the finite moods; as *tarawaf*, *tarawwn*, &c.

(b) *A* is generally retained in the finite tenses of *bwyta*; as *bwytâodd*, *bwytâwn*, &c.

212. Such as have *io* in the infin., strike off *o*, and retain *i*; as *ceis-io*, to seek, *ceis-iaf*, *ceis-iwn*. Such as have *hâu* (or *âu*) strike off *u*, and retain *hâ* (or *â*); as *cyfiawn-hâu*, *cyfiawn-hâwn*.

213. Some other verbs, although their infinitives do not end in *io*, yet borrow *i* in the finite moods; namely, infinitives ending in *l*, and some which end in *n*, *id*, *yg*, *air*; as *dal*, *daliaf*, *arwain*, *arweiniaf*; *ymlid*, *ymlidiaf*, *cynnyg*, *cynnygiaf*; *cynniwair*, *cynniweiriaf*. But in the dialect of South Wales the *i* is scarcely ever borrowed.

214. Those which end in *eu*, *w*, *fan*, suffer no elision; as *dechreu*, *dechreuaif*; *cadw*, *cadwaf*, *hedfan*, *hedfanaf*.

(a) *Bwrw* rejects *w* and borrows *i*; as *bwrw*, *bwriaf*.

^a These verbs are frequently written *taro*, *gado*, *addo*, *gurando*, in the infinitive.

215. Such as have *ai* and *w*, followed by a consonant, in the last syllable of the infinitive, respectively change these vowels into *ei*, and *y*, when a suffix is added; as *arwain*, *arweinïaf*; *hebrwng*, *hebryngaf*.

216. Verbs that retain *aw*, *hâ* (or *â*), and *a* in the finite moods (as *tarawaf*, *cyfiawnhâf*, *bwytaf*;) and those which have *a* in the penult of the infin., may or may not change *a* into *e* in the 2 pers. sing. and pl. of pres. and first future, indic; 2 pers. sing. of imperf.; 1 and 2 pers. sing. of perf.; and 2 pers. pl. of the imperative.

217. *A* is cut off from the suffix of the pl. number of the perfect, and from the sing. and pl. of the pluperfect, when *w*, preceded by a vowel, ends the root-word; as *clyw-ed*, to hear, *clywsom*, for *clywasom*. *A* is sometimes cut off before *l*; as *gwel-ed*, to see, *gwelsom*, for *gwelasom*.

(a) If *w* is preceded by a consonant, the conjugation is regular; as *berwi*, to boil, *berwasom*.

218. Verbs ending in *oi* (as *ffoi*, *ymdroi*) retain *i* of the infin. and cut off *a* of the finite endings in the pl. number of the perf., and sing. and pl. of the plup.; as *ffoi*, to flee, *ffoisom*, for *ffoasom*. But some write *ffoasom*, *ffoasoch*, *ffoasant*, &c. regularly.

219. When two of the same vowels meet, some writers retain both, but others omit one of them, placing, generally, a circumflex over the retained vowel; as *gwrandaŵn* or *gwrandañn*; *cyfrawnhâf* or *cyfrawnhâf*; *ffôdd* or *ffôdd*.

DEFINITION OF THE MOODS.

220. A *mood* expresses the mode or manner in which the verbal action or state is described.

221. "The *indicative* mood declares the action or state to exist simply, and as a fact."

222. The *imperative* mood commands, requests, or directs an action to be done or a state to exist.

223. The *subjunctive* (or *conjunctive*) mood declares an action or state conceived as possible under certain conditions.

224. That which is called the "*potential* mood," (i. e. implying *liberty*, *power*, *obligation*, &c.) is expressed in Welsh, as in English, by the aid of auxiliary verbs; as *gallaf fyned*, I may go; *medraf ddysgu*, I can learn; *dylech fyned*, you ought to go.

225. "The *infinitive* mood is the notion of the verb standing in its simplest form, without reference to any particular subject."

TENSES OF VERBS.

226. A *tense* expresses the time of the action or state of the verb.

227. Tenses are divided into *present*, *past* and *future*; or more minutely, into *present*, *imperfect*, *perfect*, *pluperfect*, *future*, and *future perfect*.

228. **Present.** *Present tense indicative* describes an action or state conceived as doing or existing at the present time. The Welsh language has no inflected form to describe present tense for any of its verbs, except *bod*, to be, and the irregular *gwn*, I know, and its compound *adwaen*, I know: hence this tense either borrows the form of the future, as *dysgaf*, *dysgir fi*; or is expressed periphrastically by the inflections of *bod* and the present participle of the other verb, as *wyf yn dysgu*, I am learning; *ydys yn fy nysgu*, I am being taught. [One of the passive forms borrows *bod* and *cael*; as *wyf yn cael fy nysgu*=I am having myself taught.]

(a) There is the same difference between *dysgaf* and *wyf yn dysgu*, as there is between *I learn*, and *I am learning*; but this difference of meaning is not strictly attended to. The periphrastic form is the more frequent, and is always used when the time of an action is to be marked with exactness.

(b) Habit or custom is sometimes expressed by the future of *bod* with a participle: as *byddaf yn myned yno*, I am in the habit of going there.

229. The *present subjunctive* borrows the inflected form of the future perfect; as *dysgwylf*, *dysger fi*.

230. **Imperfect.** The *imperfect indicative* describes (a) "An action or state continuing and not completed, at some given point of past time." This is expressed in Welsh by the imperfect *oeddw'n*, &c. with the present participle of the other verb; as *oeddw'n yn dysgu*: *oeddid yn fy nysgu*.

(a) The same idea is expressed by the *inflected form* of a certain class of verbs: such as *gwelod*, *cyngu*, *eistedd*.

231. (β) It describes *habits*, *customs*, *actions frequently repeated*, &c. and is expressed by the inflected form of the

verb: as *dysgwn*, *dysgid fi*; or by the imperfect *byddwn*, &c. with the present participle of the other verb, as, *byddwn yn dysgu*, *byddid yn fy nysgu*.

232. The *imperfect subjunctive* borrows the inflected form of the indicative, or the periphrastic made by "*byddwn*;" as *dysgwn*, or *byddwn yn dysgu*, &c.

233. Perfect. The *perfect definite* (or *perfect present*) brings a past action into close connection with present time.

(a) It is expressed by the present indicative of *bod* with a past participle; as *wyf wedi dysgu*, I have learnt; *wyf wedi fy nysgu*, I have been taught. (β) It is expressed frequently, but not so properly, by the inflected form; as *dysgais*, *dysgwyd fi*.

234. The *perfect indefinite* (or *aorist*) describes past time indefinitely, and is represented by the inflected form of the verb; as *dysgais*, I learnt; *dysgwyd fi*, I was taught.

235. Pluperfect. The pluperfect indic. describes an action as completed before the occurrence of another past action. It is expressed (a) by the imperf. of *bod* with a past participle; as *oeddwn wedi dysgu*, I had learnt; *oeddwn wedi fy nysgu*, I had been taught: (β) by the inflexions of the verb; as *dysgaswn*, *dysgasid fi*. [The periphrastic occurs oftener than the inflected form.]

236. The *pluperfect subjunctive* is expressed either by the inflected form of the plup. indic.; as *dysgaswn*, *dysgasid fi*; or by *buaswn*, &c. with a participle; as *buaswn wedi dysgu*, *buasid wedi fy nysgu*.

237. Future. The *future* speaks of an action or state in future time. It is expressed by inflection of the verbs; as *dysgaf*, I will learn; *dysgir fi*, I shall be taught; and sometimes by the future of the auxiliary *gwneyd*, to do, with the infinitive of the other verb; as *gwnaf ddysgu*; *gwneir fy nysgu*.

238. *Duty*, *compulsion*, &c. will be expressed by the future of *cael*, to have, with the other verb in the infinitive mood; as *caf ddysgu*, I shall have to learn.

239. Future perfect. This tense expresses that an action shall have been completed before the occurrence of another action. It is expressed (a) by the first future of *bod* and the past participle of the other verb; as *byddaf wedi dysgu*, I shall have learnt; *byddaf wedi fy nysgu*, I shall have been taught: (β) by an inflected form, in subjoined clauses; as

pan ddysgwylf, when I shall have learnt; *pan ddysger fi*, when I shall have been taught. [This latter form, however, occurs oftener in present subjunctive.]

240. A progressive state is expressed by the inflections of *bod* with the present participle, or a compound of the present participle, of the other verb; as,

Wyf yn dysgu, <i>I am learning.</i>	Buaswn yn dysgu. Oeddwn wedi bod yn dysgu.	} <i>I had been learning.</i>
Oeddwn yn dysgu, <i>I was learning.</i>	Byddaf yn dysgu, <i>I shall be learning.</i>	
Bum yn dysgu, Wyf wedi bod yn dysgu,	}	<i>I have been learning.</i>

PARTICIPLES.

241. Participles are expressed in Welsh by the infinitive mood of any proposed verb, preceded by certain particles embracing the notion of present, past, and future time.

242. **Present.** *Present active* is formed by placing *yn**, *gan*, or *dan* before the verb; as, *yn dysgu*, *gan ddysgu*, *dan ddysgu*.

243. The *passive participle of all tenses* is distinguished from the active by having the *possessive pronoun* inserted between the time-defining particle and the verb; as, present, *yn fy nysgu*; past, *wedi fy nysgu*; future, *ar fy nysgu*.

244. Another form for the passive is made by inserting the auxiliary *cael*, to have, between the particle of time and the pronoun; as, *yn cael fy nysgu*.

(a) *Yn* is followed by the *radical* sound; *gan* and *dan* by the *middle*.

245. **Past.** The past participle is formed by putting *wedi* (or *gwedi*), *ar ol*, or *yn ol*, before the verb; as *wedi dysgu*, *ar ol dysgu*, *yn ol dysgu*.

(a) *Wedi* (or *gwedi*), *ar ol*, and *yn ol*, govern the *radical* sound.

256. **Future.** The future participle is made by putting

* Probably the particle *yn* is cognate with the Greek *ων*, the Latin *ens*, and the English *ing*. (*Διδάσκων*, *docens*, teaching, *yn dysgu*.) Others are of opinion that it signifies *in*, or *in the act of*; so that '*yn dysgu*' would be literally translated *in the act of learn*.

ar, or ar fedr (cf. L. *futurus*) before the verb; as *ar ddysgu*, *ar fedr dysgu*.

(a) *Ar* governs the *middle*; *ar fedr*, the *radical* sound.

247. **Edig and adwy.** *Edig* has in some words the force of a past passive participle; as *cyfieithiedig gan Arthur*, translated by Arthur: in other words it is looked upon as an adjective termination; as *dyn dysgedig*, a learned man. *Adwy* implies power in future time, corresponding to 'able'; as *caffaeladwy*, obtainable.

CONJUGATION OF VERBS.

The verb *Bod*, *to be*.

248. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. *I am*.

Sin. 1. Wyf, or ydwyf ^t .	Pl. 1. Ym, or ydym.
2. Wyt, or ydwyt.	2. Ych, or ydych.
3. Yw, or ydyw, mae, sydd (sy), oes.	3. Ynt, or ydynt, maent, sydd (sy), oes.

Imperfect. *a) I was*.

Sin. 1. Oeddwn, (contr. own.)	Pl. 1. Oeddem, or oeddym, (c. oem.)
2. Oeddit, (c. oit.)	2. Oeddech or oeddych, (c. oech.)
3. Oedd, or ydoedd.	3. Oeddent, or oeddynt, (c. oent.)

b) I was wont, I used, &c. (of habit or custom).

Sin. 1. Byddwn.	Pl. 1. Byddem, (or byddym.)
2. Byddit.	2. Byddech, (or byddyich.)
3. Byddai.	3. Byddent, (or byddynt.)

^t There is now no difference in signification between *wyf*, and *ydwyf*. *Yd* is probably cognate with the Latin *id*, and might have been formerly employed as a nom. before all persons, like *it* in English. (*It* is I, *it* is they.)

Wyf, *wyt*, &c. are compounded of *yw* with a pronoun: thus *wyf*=*yw-mi*; *wyt*=*yw-ti*; *ym*=*yw-ym*; *ych*=*yw-ychwi*; *ynt*=*yw-hwynt*.

Sydd is compounded of *sy* and *ydd*=*id*, and signifies "it is."

Oes comes, perhaps, from *o*=*he* or *it*, and *es*=*ys* and Eng. *is*: *oes*=*he*, or *it* is.

[*Mae* is perhaps made up either of *ma*, a place, or of *muw*, I move, and the pron. *e*, he or it. If from *muw*, *mae* will signify *he is moving* and hence *is existing*. With this compare the two Greek words, *ἐμ* I go, and *ἐμ*, I am.]

Perfect indefinite. *I have been.*

Sin. 1. Bum ^a , (buaais.)	Pl. 1. Buom or buasom.
2. Buost, (buaist.)	2. Buoch or buasoch.
3. Bu, (buodd, bues.)	3. Buont, buant, or buasant.

Perfect definite, *I have been.*

Sin. 1. Wyf wedi bod.	Pl. 1. Ym wedi bod.
2. Wyt wedi bod.	2. Ych wedi bod.
3. Mae &c. wedi bod.	3. Maent, &c. wedi bod.

Pluperfect. *a) I had been.*

Sin. 1. Buaswn.	Pl. 1. Buasem, (or buesym.)
2. Buasit.	2. Buasech, (or buesych.)
3. Buasai.	3. Buasent, (or buesynt.)

b) I had been.

Sin. 1. Oeddwn wedi bod	Pl. 1. Oeddem wedi bod.
2. Oeddit wedi bod.	2. Oeddech wedi bod.
3. Oedd wedi bod.	3. Oeddent wedi bod.

Future. *I shall be.*

Sin. 1. Byddaf.	Pl. 1. Byddwn.
2. Byddi.	2. Byddwch.
3. Bydd or bydda.	3. Byddant.

Future perfect. *a) I shall have been.*

Sin. 1. Byddaf wedi bod.	Pl. 1. Byddwn wedi bod.
2. Byddi wedi bod.	2. Byddwch wedi bod.
3. Bydd (or bydda) wedi bod.	3. Byddant wedi bod.

b) I shall have been (in subjoined clauses).

Sin. 1. Byddwyf or byddof, (c. bwyf, bôf.)	Pl. 1. Byddom, (c. bôm.)
2. Byddych, byddech or byddot, (c. bÿch, bêch, bôt.)	2. Byddoch, (c. bôch.)
3. Byddo, (c. bo.)	3. Byddont, (c. bônt.)

^a *Bum* is compounded of *bu* and *mi* (or *ym*). The remaining terminations of *bod* are the same as those of *dyegu*.

249. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

a) *Be thou.*

Sin. 1.	Pl. 1. Byddwn.
2. Bydd or bydda.	2. Byddwch.
3. Bydded, (c. boed, bid.)	3. Byddant, -ont, -ent, (c. boent, bint.)

b) *Let me be, or may I be.*

Sin. 1. Bydded i mi fod.	Pl. 1. Bydded i ni fod.
2. Bydded i ti fod.	2. Bydded i chwi fod.
3. Bydded iddo (oriddi) fod.	3. Bydded iddynt fod.

250. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. *I may be.*

Byddwyf, &c.: see form "b)" of *fut. perfect*.

Imperfect. *I would or should be.*

Sin. 1. Byddwn, (c. bawn [*] .)	Pl. 1. Byddem,-ym,(c.baem)
2. Byddit, (c. bait.)	2. Byddech, -ych (c haech.)
3. Byddai, (c. bai.)	3. Byddent, -ynt, (c. baent.)

Pluperfect. *I should have been.*

Buaswn, &c.: see form "a)" of *plup. indicative*.

251. INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present and imperf. Bod, *to be; that I am or was.*

Perf. and plup. Bod wedi bod, *darfod bod, to have been; that I have or had been* (in subjoined clauses).

Future. Bod ar fod, bod ar fedr bod, *to be about to be; that I am about to be* (in subjoined clauses).

^{*} *Pe*, if, and the contracted form *bawn*, &c. sometimes coalesce into one word. Sin. Pettwn (if I were), pettit, pettai. Pl. Pettym, pettych, pettynt. "Mi a fynwn *pettych* chwi oll yn llefaru â thafodau dyeithr." 1 Cor. xiv. 6.

Pe is likewise prefixed to the pluperfect. Sin. Pettaswn (if I had been), pettasit, pettasai. Pl. Pettasem, pettasech, pettasent.

252. PARTICIPLES.

Present. Yn bod, gan fod, dan fod, *being*.

Past. Wedi (or gwedi) bod, ar ol bod, yn ol bod, *having been*.

Future. Ar fod, ar fedr bod, *about to be*

Verbal adjectives. Bodedig, *endued with being*. Bodadwy, *capable of being*.

IMPERSONAL FORM OF BOD.

253. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Pr.	{ Ys' or ydys, <i>it is</i> , (or there is, &c.) Byddir or byddys, (of usage.)	Plup.	{ Buasid (or buesid,) Oeddid wedi bod	{ <i>It had been</i> .
Im-perf.	{ Oeddid, <i>it was</i> . Byddid, (of usage.)	Fut.	Byddir, <i>it will be</i> .	
Perf. indef.	{ Buwyd, (or bued)	Fut. perf.	{ Bydder (c. baer.) Byddir (or bydd- ys) wedi bod.	{ <i>It will have been</i> .
Perf. def.	{ Ys (or ydys) wedi bod			

254. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Present. Bydder, *let be*.

255. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Pr. Bydder, (c. baer,) *It may be*.

Imperf. Byddid, (c. baid,) *It would be*.

Plup. Buasid, (or buesid,) *It would have been*.

256. Compound verbs of Bod.

Canfod, (can-bod,) <i>to perceive</i> .	Adnabod, (ad-nabod,) <i>to recognise</i> .
Nabod, (gwn-bod,) <i>to recognise</i> .	Cydnabod, (cyd-nabod,) <i>to acknowledge</i> .

y Ys appears to be the same with the Eng. *is*, and *es* of the Gr. Lat. and Welsh, in *es-ti*, *es-t*, *o-es*. It is employed in forming the perfect and plup. tenses of Welsh verbs,—taking the form *os* in *buost* = *bu-os-ti*, and *as* in other places; as *carais* = *car-as-i*; *carais* = *car-as-ti*.

Gwybod, (gŵydd-bod,) to know. Gorfod, (gor-bod,) to compel.
 Darfod, (dar-bod), to cease to exist. Hanfod, (han-bod,) to exist.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

257. Auxiliary verbs serve to produce additional forms to other verbs, and to particularise their signification, and the time of action or event. The auxiliaries are *bod*, *darfod*, *cael*, and *gwneyd*, to which are usually added *gallu* and *medru*, *dylwn*, *dichon*, *rhaid*, and *mynu*.

258. *Gallu* and *medru*. "*Medru* implies skill and ability, whether natural or acquired, on the part of the person speaking. *Gallu* implies power, permission, or the non-existence of any external impediment. Thus *gallu* corresponds nearly to 'may,' *medru* to 'can.' They are conjugated regularly. *Gallaf fyned*, I may go. *Medraf ddysgu*, I can learn. (*medrus*, cf. *magister*, L. = Fr. *maître*.)

259. *Dylwn* (fr. an obsolete infin. *dylu*) implies *duty*, like the Eng. 'I ought.' It is a defective verb, having only the imperfect tense, which is used to denote present obligation, and the pluperfect, which is used to denote past obligation.

Dylwn fyned, I ought to go. Impers. *Dylid*.

Dylaswn fyned, I ought to have gone. Impers. *Dylasid*.

Dylaswn fod wedi myned, I ought to have been gone.

260. *Dichon** implies *contingency* = 'it may be;' and *power*, corresponding to 'can.' '*Dichon fy mod yu cyfeil-iorni*, it may be that I err. '*Dichon i mi ddywedyd hyn*, it may be that I said this. '*Ni ddichon dyn ei draethu*, man cannot relate it.

261. *Rhaid* is both a noun and a verb. It corresponds to 'must,' and, like it, is indeclinable.

(a) In the following examples it is strictly a noun.

Y mae yn rhaid i mi ddysgu,	} there is need for me to
Rhaid yw i mi ddysgu,	
Rhaid i mi ddysgu (omitting the verb)	

learn = I must learn.

(b) In these examples it is a verb.

Myfi a raid ddysgu	} It is I (or you) that must learn.
Tydi a raid ddysgu	

* T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

* Cf. Gr. *πρὸς τὸν νόμον*.

262. *Cael* strictly signifies *to have*. As an auxiliary to *active* verbs, it implies liberty, or freedom from external hindrances; permission, compulsion, &c.; as *caf ddysgu*. When an auxiliary to *passive* verbs it retains its radical signification: as *Yr wyf yn cael fy nysgu*.

263. *Gwneyd*, *to do*, and *darfod*, *to cease*, serve merely to give a different form to some of the tenses; as, *gwnaethym ddysgu*, *I learnt*: *darfum ddysgu*, or *darfu i mi ddysgu*, *I learnt*.

(a) *Cael* and *Gwneyd* are irregular verbs, and are classified with them.

Darfod is a compound of *bod*, and, for the most part, conjugated like it.

264. *Mynu* (fr. *myn*, the will) implies *will* or *determination*, and is conjugated regularly. *Mynaf ddysfod*, *I will have to come*; *I will come*.

CONJUGATION OF A REGULAR VERB.

265. 'There are two conjugations; one by *inflection*, and the other by *auxiliaries*.'

266. *Terminations of the inflected form*^b.

^b The terminations of verbs are changes and contractions of personal pronouns, as will appear from the subjoined analysis.

Pres. Af=*fi*; i=*di*; a=*e*? Wn=*ni*; wch=*chwi*; ant=*hwynt*. (Cf. L. *amant*.)

Imperf. Wn=*mi*? it=*ti*; al=*e*? Em=*hμeis*; ech=*chwi*; ent=*hwynt*.

Perf. Ais=*as i*; aist=*as ti*; odd, cf. *amavit*, *loved*. Asom=*as hμeis*; asoch=*as chwi*; asant=*as hwynt*. [*As* is a verb, see §. 253, *note*.]

Plup. Aswn=*as mi*? asit=*as ti*; asai=*as e*? Asem=*as hμeis*; asoch=*as chwi*; asent=*as hwynt*. [Cf. L. *issem*, *isses*, &c.]

Future, see present.

Fut. perf. Wyf, of=*fi*; ot=*ti*; o=*o*. Om=*hμeis*; och=*chwi*; ont=*hwynt*.

Imperative. A; cf. L. *ama*; ed; cf. L. *amet*. Wn=*ni*; wch=*chwi*; ant=*hwynt*.

But Dr. Pughe seems to be of opinion, that these suffixes are to be derived from primitive verbs; such as *au*, *addu*, &c. His words are: "What appears as the inflections are identified, on due examination, to be these primitive verbs affixed to nouns, so as to form a verbal characteristic, in the different moods and tenses." (*Gram.* p. 65.)

INDICATIVE.

Present.			Imperfect.		
Sin. 1. -af.	Pl. 1. -wn.		Sin. 1. -wn.	Pl. 1. -em.	
2. -i.	2. -wch.		2. -it.	2. -ech.	
3. -a (or root).	3. -ant.		3. -ai.	3. -ent.	
Perfect.			Pluperfect.		
Sin. 1. -ais.	Pl. 1. -asom.		Sin. 1. -aswn.	Pl. 1. -asem.	
2. -aist.	2. -asoch.		2. -asit.	2. -asech.	
3. -odd.	3. -asant.		3. -asai.	3. -asent.	
Future.			Future perfect.		
Sin. 1. -af.	Pl. 1. -wn.		Sin. 1. -wyf, (or -of.)	Pl. 1. -om.	
2. -i.	2. wch.		2. -ych, (-ech or -ot.)	2. -och.	
3. -a (or root).	3. -ant.		3. -o.	3. -ont.	

IMPERATIVE Present.

Sin. 1. -	Pl. 1. -wn.
2. -a (or root).	2. -wch.
3. -ed.	3. -ant (-ont -ent.)

SUBJUNCTIVE. Present=fut. perf. Imperf.=imperf. Indic.
Pluperfect=plup. Indic.

INFINITIVE: see §. 203, 204.

DYSGU, to learn or teach.

ACTIVE VOICE.

267. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present^c. a) *I learn.*

Sin. 1. Dysgaf.	Pl. 1. Dysgwn.
2. Dysgi.	2. Dysgwch.
3. Dysg or dysga.	3. Dysgant.

b) *I am learning; I learn.*

Sin. 1. Wyf yn dysgu.	Sin. 1. Ym yn dysgu.
2. Wyt yn dysgu	2. Ych yn dysgu.
3. Mae &c. yn dysgu.	3. Maent &c. yn dysgu.

Imperfect. a) generally of habit or custom: *I used to learn, &c.*

Sin. 1. Dysgwn.	Pl. 1. Dysgem ^d .
2. Dysgit.	2. Dysgech.
3. Dysgai.	3. Dysgent.

^c The subjoined is the form given by some grammarians for the present tense of the indicative, and is adopted by a few writers of the present day.

Sin. 1. Dysgwyf.	Pl. 1. Dysgym.
2. Dysgwyt.	2. Dysgych.
3. Dysgyw.	3. Dysgynt.

^d The pl. of imperf. sometimes ends in *ym, ych, ynt*.

b) Of habit or custom : *I used to learn.*

Sin. 1. Byddwn yn dysgu.	Pl. 1. Byddem yn dysgu.
2. Byddit yn dysgu.	2. Byddech yn dysgu.
3. Byddai yn dysgu.	3. Byddent yn dysgu.

c) *I was learning.*

Sin. 1. Oeddwn yn dysgu.	Pl. 1. Oeddem yn dysgu.
2. Oedit yn dysgu.	2. Oeddech yn dysgu.
3. Oedd yn dysgu.	3. Oeddent yn dysgu.

Perfect. a) *Perfect Indefinite : I learnt.*

Sin. 1. Dysgais.	Pl. 1. Dysgasom.
2. Dysgaist.	2. Dysgasoch.
3. Dysgodd*.	3. Dysgasant.

b) *Perfect Definite : I have learnt.*

Sin. 1. Wyf wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1. Ym wedi dysgu.
2. Wyt wedi dysgu.	2. Ych wedi dysgu.
3. Mae &c. wedi dysgu.	3. Maent wedi dysgu.

Pluperfect. a) *I had learnt.*

Sin. 1. Dysgaswn.	Pl. 1. Dysgasem [†] .
2. Dysgasit.	2. Dysgasech.
3. Dysgasai.	3. Dysgasent.

(a) The inflected forms, both of the active and passive of this tense, are oftener used in the subjunctive; but when they can be employed in the indicative without rendering the sentence ambiguous, they are to be preferred to the periphrastic "*oeddwn wedi dysgu*," as being more concise.

b) *I had learnt.*

Sin. 1. Oeddwn wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1. Oeddem wedi dysgu.
2. Oedit wedi dysgu.	2. Oeddech wedi dysgu.
3. Oedd wedi dysgu.	3. Oeddent wedi dysgu.

c) *Byddwn wedi dysgu, &c. of habit or custom.*

* The third pers. sing. ends sometimes in *es*; in the poets in *awdd*; and in *is*, *ws*, and *wys* in the colloquial language of South Wales. *As* is occasionally met with.

[†] Sometimes *dysgesym*, *dysgesych*, *dysgesynt*.

Future. *a) I will learn.*

Sin. 1. Dysgaf.	Pl. 1. Dysgwn.
2. Dysgi.	2. Dysgwch.
3. Dysg or Dysga ^s .	3. Dysgant.

b) Caf ddysgu, &c. permission, compulsion, 'shall,' &c.

c) Gwnaf ddysgu, &c. promise.

Future Perfect. *a) I shall have learnt* (in subjoined clauses).

Sin. 1. Dysgwyf or dysgof.	Pl. 1. Dysgom.
2. Dysgych, dysgech, or dysgot.	2. Dysgoch.
3. Dysgo.	3. Dysgont.

b) I shall have learnt.

Sin. 1. Byddaf wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1. Byddwn wedi dysgu.
2. Byddi wedi dysgu.	2. Byddwch wedi dysgu.
3. Bydd wedi dysgu.	3. Byddant wedi dysgu.

^s The third pers. sing. may always be made to end in *a*; as *dysga*, *cara*, *ysgrifena*. But *a* is frequently omitted, and the person made to consist of the root of the verb, either in its pure state, or with a change of some of its vowels.

The following remarks are added to shew how this person is formed by inflexion of vowels.

(*a*) *A* is changed into *ai*; as *saf*, *saif*; *par*, *pair*; *caff-aet*, *caiff*.

(*b*) *A* is changed into *ei*; as *taft*, *teift*; *ymafl*, *ymeift*; *gall*, *geill*; *cadw*, *ceidw*; *galw*, *geilw*; *llanw*, *lleinw*; *dal*, *deil*.

(*c*) *A* of the penult. and *a* of the ultima are changed into *e*, *ei*, respectively; as *gwahardd*, *gweheirdd*; *gwarchadw*, *gwercheidw*.

(*d*) *A* of the penult. and *a* or *e* of the ultima are changed into *e*, *y*, respectively; as *attal*, *ettyl*; *para*, *pery*; *ateb*, *etyb*; *gwared*, *gwerdyd*; *darllen*, *derllyn*. *Bwyta* is also changed into *bwyty*.

(*e*) *A* and *o* of the penult. and *o* (or *aw*) of the ult. are changed into *e*, *y*, respectively; as, *aros*, *erys*; *marchog*, *merchyg*; *adrodd*, *edrydd*; *dangos*, *dengys*; *gwarandaw*, *gwarendy*; *taraw*, *tery*; *gadaw*, *gedy*; *addaw*, *eddy*; *gosod*, *gesyd*.

(*f*) *O* in monosyllables, or in the ult. of words of more than one syllable, is very frequently changed into *y*; as *tro*, *try*; *tor*, *tyr*; *rho*, *dry*; *rhodd*, *rhydd*; *ffo*, *ffy*; *golch*, *gylch*; *dod*, *dyd*; *clo*, *cly*; *coll*, *cyl*; *llosg*, *llysg*; *cyfod*, *cyfyd*; *deffro*, *deffry*; *cyffro*, *cyffry*; *diffodd*, *diffydd*; *ymdro*, *ymdry*; *gwrthod*, *gwrthyd*.

In colloquial language this person is made to end in *iff*; as *dysgiff*, *ysgrifeniff*, which is condemned by *Dr. Davies* as "most corrupt." Perhaps *iff* is a corruption of the pronoun *ef*, he; as *dysgiff*=*dysgef*; or cognate with the Latin *eb*, as in *docebit*.

268. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Present. *a) Learn thou.*

Sin. I—— ^h	Pl. 1. Dysgwn.
2. Dysg, or dysga. ⁱ	2. Dysgwch.
3. Dysged.	3. Dysgant, (dysgont, or dysgent.)

b) Let me learn, may I learn.

Sin. 1. Bydded i mi ddysgu.	Pl. 1. Bydded i ni ddysgu.
2. Bydded i ti ddysgu.	2. Bydded i chwi ddysgu.
3. Bydded iddo (or iddi) ddysgu.	3. Bydded iddynt ddysgu.

269. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. *I may learn.*

- a) Dysgwyf, &c. See form "a)" of the Fut. perfect.*
b) Byddo i mi ddysgu, &c.

Imperfect. *I should learn.*

- a) Dysgwn, &c. See form "a)" of the Imperf. Indic.*
b) Byddai i mi ddysgu, &c.

Pluperfect. *I should have learnt.*

- a) Dysgaswn, &c. See "a)" of the Plup. Indicative.*
b) Buaswn wedi dysgu, &c. c) Buasai i mi ddysgu, &c.

270. INFINITIVE MOOD.

Dysgu, to learn, may refer to all tenses according to the preceding verb or particle on which it depends.

Bwriadaf ddysgu, *I intend to learn.*Bwriedais ddysgu, *I intended to learn.*Deuaf i ddysgu, *I will come to learn.*

Present and imperf. *Bod yn dysgu, to be learning, to learn; that I am or was learning*, used in subordinate sentences.

^h Occasionally we meet with a first pers. imper. "*Yna hawwyf fi, a bwytaed arall*," *Job xxxi. 8.*

ⁱ The second pers. of the imper. may, like the 3 pers. sing. fut. Indic. be made to end in *a*; as *dysga, gwrthoda, cara*; but the suffix is very frequently omitted; as *dysg, gwrthod, car*.

Perf. and plup. Darfod i mi ddysgu; dysgu o honof; i mi ddysgu; bod wedi dysgu, *to have learnt; that I learnt; that I have or had learnt*, used in subordinate sentences.

Future. Bod ar ddysgu; bod ar fedr dysgu, *to be about to learn; that I am about to learn*, used in subordinate sentences.

271. PARTICIPLES.

Present. Yn dysgu; gan ddysgu; dan ddysgu, *learning*.

Past. Wedi (or gwedi) dysgu; ar ol dysgu, yn ol dysgu, *having learnt*.

Future. Ar ddysgu, ar fedr ddysgu, *about to learn*.

(a) When the participle is followed by a personal pronoun as its object, expressed or understood, a corresponding possessive pronoun will intervene between the particle of time and the infinitive.

Present, *teaching me, &c.*

- | | |
|-----------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Yn fy nysgu i. | 1. Yn ein dysgu ni. |
| 2. Yn dy ddysgu di. | 2. Yn eich dysgu chwi. |
| 3. { Yn ei ddysgu ef. | 3. Yn eu dysgu hwy. |
| { Yn ei dysgu hi. | |

Past, *having taught me, &c.*

- | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. Wedi fy nysgu i. | 1. Wedi ein dysgu ni. |
| 2. Wedi dy ddysgu di. | 2. Wedi eich dysgu chwi. |
| 3. { Wedi ei ddysgu ef. | 3. Wedi eu dysgu hwy. |
| { Wedi ei dysgu hi. | |

Future, *about to teach me, &c.*

- | | |
|-----------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Ar fy nysgu i. | 1. Ar ein dysgu ni. |
| 2. Ar dy ddysgu di. | 2. Ar eich dysgu chwi. |
| 3. { Ar ei ddysgu ef. | 3. Ar eu dysgu hwy. |
| { Ar ei dysgu hi. | |

PASSIVE VOICE.

272. The passive voice is expressed either by *inflection* or by *periphrasis*.

273. The *inflected* form has only one termination for each tense: thus,

Pres.	Imperf.	Perf.	Plup.	Fut.
Ir;	as	Id; as	Wyd (or ed;) as	Asid; as.
Dysgir.	Dysgid.	Dysgwyd, (or dysged.)	Dysgasid.	Dysgir.

Fut. perf., Imperative, and Pres. Subjunctive,
Er; as Dysger.

274. These inflections are made to agree with all persons, whether singular or plural, standing as the nominative case; so that the person and number of the verb are to be determined by the person and number of the nominative case. Thus *dysgir* when put in construction with *mi* (as *dysgir fi*) is of the first person, and sing. number; when put in construction with *chwi* (as *dysgir chwi*) it is in the second person, plural number.

275. A proposition may be expressed by this form in three different ways: (1) with the nominative case before the verb; as *mi a ddysgir*: (2) with the nom. after the verb: as *dysgir fi*: (3) with a possessive pronoun before the verb; as *fe'm dysgir*.

276. The periphrastic is formed, (1) of the inflections of *bod* with a passive participle of the verbs specified; as *wyf yn cael fy nysgu*: (2) of the inflections of the impersonal form of *bod* with active participles of the other verb; as *ydys yn fy nysgu*.

277. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. *I am being taught, &c.*

[Inflected.]

- | | |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| a) Sin. 1. <i>Mi a ddysgir.</i> | Pl. 1. <i>Ni a ddysgir.</i> |
| 2. <i>Ti a ddysgir.</i> | 2. <i>Chwi a ddysgir.</i> |
| 3. <i>Efe &c. ddysgir.</i> | 3. <i>Hwy &c. a ddysgir.</i> |

(a) Observe that the particle *a* is followed by the *middle* sound.

- | | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| b) Sin. 1. <i>Dysgir fi.</i> | Pl. 1. <i>Dysgir ni.</i> |
| 2. <i>Dysgir di.</i> | 2. <i>Dysgir chwi.</i> |
| 3. <i>Dysgir ef, &c.</i> | 3. <i>Dysgir hwy, &c.</i> |

(a) Observe that *mi* and *ti* assume the *middle* sound: *fi, di*.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|
| c) Sin. 1. <i>Fe'm dysgir.</i> | Pl. 1. <i>Fe'n dysgir.</i> |
| 2. <i>Fe'rh ddysgir.</i> | 2. <i>Fe'ch dysgir.</i> |
| 3. <i>Fe'i dysgir.</i> | 3. <i>Fe'u dysgir.</i> |

(a) *Fe* is merely an auxiliary pronoun, for which *e* and *fo* may be employed. (*E'm dysgir; fo'm dysgir.*) In a negative clause, and

after such words as *fel*, *pan*, *pe*, *y*, these auxiliary words are dismissed. (*Ni'm dysgir*; *fel y'm dysger &c.*) *Fe'm &c.* may also be written *fe ym*, or *fe a'm*; as *fe ym dysgir*; *fe a'm dysgir*.

(b) Observe that the second person *yth* (contr. *'th*) takes the middle sound after it. *Fe* is followed by the same sound; as *fe ddysgir* Arthur.

(c) The personal pronouns are generally omitted in this form, the possessive being thought sufficient to indicate the person; but when they are expressed, they are thus written: 1st pers. *i*; 2d pers. *di*; 3d pers. *ef*, *e*, *o*; as *fe'm dysgir i*; *fe'th ddysgir di*; *fe'i dysgir ef*, *e*, *o*.

☞ When the student has learnt the three foregoing examples of the present of the inflected form, he will be enabled to acquire the conjugation of the other tenses without any trouble, as he has only to substitute the inflections of those tenses (see above) for that of the present.

[*Periphrastic.*]

- d) Sin. 1. Wyf yn cael fy Pl. 1. Ym yn cael ein dysgu.
nysgu.
2. Wyt yn cael dy 2. Ych yn cael eich
ddysgu. dysgu.
3. Mae, &c. yn cael 3. Maent, &c. yn cael eu
ei ddysgu. dysgu.

☞ A knowledge of the inflections of *bod* together with the passive participles of *dysgu*, is all that is necessary to master this form throughout.

- e) Sin. 1. Ydys yn fy nysgu. Pl. 1. Ydys yn ein dysgu.
2. Ydys yn dy ddysgu. 2. Ydys yn eich dysgu.
3. Ydys yn ei ddysgu, 3. Ydys yn eu dysgu, &c.
&c.

☞ A knowledge of the *impersonal* form of *bod* together with the active participles of *dysgu* is all that is necessary to master the whole of this form.

Imperfect. *I was (or used to be) taught.*

- a) 1. Mi a ddysgid. 1. Ni a ddysgid.
2. Ti a ddysgid. 2. Chwi a ddysgid.
3. Efe a ddysgid. 3. Hwya ddysgid.
b) Dysgid fi, &c. e) Oeddid yn fy nysgu, &c.
c) Fe'm dysgid, &c. f) Byddwn yn cael fy nysgu,
d) Oeddwyn yn cael fy &c.
nysgu, &c. g) Byddid yn fy nysgu, &c.

Perfect Indefinite. *I was taught.*

- | | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| a) 1. Mi a ddysgwyd ^h | 1. Ni a ddysgwyd. |
| 2. Ti a ddysgwyd. | 2. Chwi a ddysgwyd. |
| 3. Efe a ddysgwyd. | 3. Hwyl a ddysgwyd. |
| b) Dysgwyd fi, &c. | c) Fe'm dysgwyd, &c. |

Perfect Definite. *I have been taught.*

- | | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------|
| a) 1. Wyf wedi cael fy nysgu. | 1. Ym wedi cael ein dysgu. |
| 2. Wyt wedi cael dy ddysgu. | 2. Ych wedi cael eich dysgu. |
| 3. Mae wedi cael ei ddysgu. | 3. Maent wedi cael eu dysgu. |
| b) Wyf wedi fy nysgu, &c. | c) Ydys wedi fy nysgu, &c. |

Pluperfect. *I had been taught.*

- | | |
|-----------------------|---|
| a) 1. Mi a ddysgasid. | 1. Ni a ddysgasid. |
| 2. Ti a ddysgasid. | 2. Chwi a ddysgasid. |
| 3. Efe a ddysgasid. | 3. Hwyl a ddysgasid. |
| b) Dysgasid fi, &c. | d) Oeddwn wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, &c. |
| c) Fe'm dysgasid, &c. | e) Oeddid wedi fy nysgu, &c. |

Future. *I shall be taught.*

- | | |
|----------------------|---------------------|
| a) 1. Mi a ddysgir. | 1. Ni a ddysgir. |
| 2. Ti a ddysgir. | 2. Chwi a ddysgir. |
| 3. Efe a ddysgir. | 3. Hwyl a ddysgir. |
| b) Dysgir fi, &c. | c) Fe'm dysgir, &c. |
| d) Caf fy nysgu, &c. | |

Future perfect. *I shall have been taught.*

- | | |
|---|--|
| a) 1. Dysger fi. | 1. Dysger ni. |
| 2. Dysger di. | 2. Dysger chwi. |
| 3. Dysger ef or hi. | 3. Dysger hwyl. |
| b) Byddaf wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, &c. | c) Byddir (or byddys) wedi fy nysgu, &c. |

^h Or *ddysged*.

278. IMPERATIVE MOOD. *Let me be taught.*

a) Like *future perfect*, form "a)".

- | | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| b) 1. Bydded i mi gael fy nysgu. | 1. Bydded i ni gael ein dysgu. |
| 2. Bydded i ti gael dy ddysgu. | 2. Bydded i chwi gael eich dysgu. |
| 3. Bydded iddo gael ei ddysgu. | 3. Bydded iddynt gael eu dysgu. |

279. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. *I may be taught.*

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| a) 1. Dysger fi ¹ . | 1. Dysger ni. |
| 2. Dysger di. | 2. Dysger chwi. |
| 3. Dysger ef. | 3. Dysger hwy. |
| b) Mi a ddysger, &c. | c) Y'm ^m dysger, &c. |
| d) Byddo i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. | |

Imperfect. *I should or would be taught.*

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------|
| a) 1. Dysgid fi. | 1. Dysgid ni. |
| 2. Dysgid di. | 2. Dysgid chwi. |
| 3. Dysgid ef. | 3. Dysgid hwy. |
| b) Mi a ddysgid, &c. | c) Y'm dysgid, &c. |
| d) Byddai i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. | |

Pluperfect. *I should or would have been taught.*

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| a) 1. Dysgasid fi. | 1. Dysgasid ni. |
| 2. Dysgasid di. | 2. Dysgasid chwi. |
| 3. Dysgasid ef. | 3. Dysgasid hwy. |
| b) Mi a ddysgasid, &c. | e) Buasid wedi fy nysgu, &c. |
| c) Y'm dysgasid, &c. | |
| d) Buaswn wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, &c. | f) Buasai i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. |

INFINITIVE MOOD.

280. 'In Welsh there is no inflection of the verb to express the Infinitive passive; but that state is indicated by

¹ The form "*dysger fi*," occurs oftener in the Subjunctive than "*mi a ddysger*."

^m As the Subjunctive is usually introduced by such particles as *fel*, *pe*, *y*, &c. *fe* is dismissed.

combinations of the possessive pronouns with the Infinitive active,' with or without auxiliary verbs.

281. When the possessive refers to a personal pronoun coming after the Infinitive, expressed or understood, the verb is *active*; as *daeth i'm dysgu* (*i*) he came to teach me". But when the possessive refers to the nom. case of the main verb, and does not admit of a pers. pron. after the verb, it indicates a *passive* state. Thus in the sentence '*haeddodd Arthur ei garu*,' *ei* refers to *Arthur*, which is the nom. case to '*haeddodd*.' So in English: '*Arthur deserved to be loved*'=*that he should be loved*.

282. The forms *fy nysgu* (or *ym dysgu*) and *cael fy nysgu*, may be joined to verbs of any tense; as,

Haeddaf fy nysgu, I deserve to be taught.

Daethym i'm dysgu, I came to be taught.

Deuaf i gael fy nysgu, I will come to be taught.

Present and imperfect.

Bod yn cael fy nysgu, *to be taught*; *that I am* or *was taught*, in subordinate sentences; as,

Dysgwylir fy mod yn cael fy nysgu.

Perfect and pluperfect.

Darfod fy nysgu, *darfod i mi gael fy nysgu*, *bod wedi* (or *wedi cael*) *fy nysgu*, *to have been taught*; *that I have* or *had been taught*, in subordinate sentences; as,

Dysgwylir ddarfod fy nysgu.

Future.

Bod ar gael fy nysgu, *bod ar fedr cael fy nysgu*, *to be about to be taught*; *that I am about to be taught*, in subordinate sentences; as,

Dysgwylir fy mod ar fedr cael fy nysgu.

283. PARTICIPLES.

Pres. and imperf. *Yn fy nysgu*, *yn cael fy nysgu*, *being taught*.

1. *Yn fy nysgu*.

2. *Yn dy ddysgu*.

3. { *Yn ei ddysgu*, *m*.

{ *Yn ei dysgu*, *f*.

1. *Yn ein dysgu*.

2. *Yn eich dysgu*.

3. *Yn eu dysgu*.

" In some cases the poss. is used when a pers. pron. cannot follow; as "*Yr hwn yr wyf yn ei garu*." (See *Syntax*.)

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Yn cael fy nysgu. | 1. Yn cael ein dysgu. |
| 2. Yn cael dy ddysgu. | 2. Yn cael eich dysgu. |
| 3. { Yn cael ei ddysgu, <i>m.</i> | 3. Yn cael eu dysgu. |
| { Yn cael ei dysgu, <i>f.</i> | |

Perf. and plup. Wedi (or gwedi) fy nysgu, ar ol, or yn ol fy nysgu, *having been taught.*

- | | |
|--------------------|--|
| 1. Wedi fy nysgu. | } and so on, like <i>pres. and imperf.</i> |
| 2. Wedi dy ddysgu. | |

Future. Ar (or ar fedr) fy nysgu, ar gael (or ar fedr cael) fy nysgu, *about to be taught.*

- | | |
|------------------|--|
| 1. Ar fy nysgu. | } and so on, like <i>pres. and imperf.</i> |
| 2. Ar dy ddysgu. | |

Verbal Adjectives.

Dysgedig, *taught.* Dysgadwy, *capable of being taught.*

284. IRREGULAR VERBS.

The verbs, which exhibit the greatest irregularity of conjugation, are the following: *myned, dyfod, gwneyd* or *gwn-
euthur, gwybod, adwaen, cael* or *caffael.*

MYNED, to go.

285. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Wyf yn myned, &c. See "*dysgu.*"

Imperf.

- | | |
|---------------|-----------------|
| 1. Awn, elwn. | 1. Aem, elem. |
| 2. Ait, elit. | 2. Aech, elech. |
| 3. Ai, elai. | 3. Aent, elent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Aethym*, elais. | 1. Aethom, elsom. |
| 2. Aethost, elaist. | 2. Aethoch, elsoch. |
| 3. Aeth, elodd. | 3. Aethant, elsant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|-------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Aethwn, elswn. | 1. Aethem, elsem. |
| 2. Aethit, elsit. | 2. Aethech, elsech. |
| 3. Aethai, elsai. | 3. Aethent, elsent. |

* Or *euthym, euthost, &c.*

Future.

- | | |
|----------------------|-----------------|
| 1. Af, elaf. | 1. Awn, elwn. |
| 2. Ai, ei, eli. | 2. Ewch, elwch. |
| 3. A, aiff, el, ela. | 3. Ant, elant. |

Future perfect.

- | | |
|------------------------|-----------|
| 1. Elwyf, elof. | 1. Elom. |
| 2. Elych, elech, elot. | 2. Eloch. |
| 3. Elo. | 3. Elont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. — | 1. Awn, elwn. |
| 2. Dos, cerdd. | 2. Ewch, elwch, cerddwch. |
| 3. Aed, eled, cerdded. | 3. Ant, elant, cerddant. |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see *fut. perfect.* Plup. see *plup. indic.*

Imperf. see *imperf. indic.*

INFINITIVE MOOD. Myned, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

PARTICIPLES. Yn myned, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

286. IMPERSONAL FORM OF MYNED.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. eir, elir. Imperf. eid, elid. Perf. aed, awd, aethwyd, aethpwyd. Plup. aethid, elsid. Fut. eir, elir. Fut. perf. aer, eler.

IMPER. MOOD. Aer, eler.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr. aer, eler. Imperf. eid, elid. Plup. aethid, elsid.

DYFOD, *to come.*

287. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: Wyf yn dyfod, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

Imperfect.

- | | |
|------------------|--------------------|
| 1. Deuwn, delwn. | 1. Deuem, delem. |
| 2. Deuit, delit. | 2. Deuech, delech. |
| 3. Deuai, delai. | 3. Deuent, delent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. Daethym, (deuais.) | 1. Daethom, (deusom.) |
| 2. Daethost, (deuaist.) | 2. Daethoch, (deusoch.) |
| 3. Daeth, (deuodd.) | 3. Daethant, (deusant.) |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|---------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Daethwn, delswn. | 1. Daethem, delsem. |
| 2. Daethit, delsit. | 2. Daethech, delsech. |
| 3. Daethai, delsai. | 3. Daethent, delsent. |

Future.

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. Deuaf, delaf, dawaf,
dôaf, dôf. | 1. Deuwn, delwn, dewn,
down. |
| 2. Deui, deli, dewi, doi. | 2. Deuwch, delwch, dewch,
dowch. |
| 3. Deua, del, dela, daw. | 3. Deuant, delant, dewant
dônt. |

Future perfect.

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. Deuwyf, delwyf (-of.) | 1. Deuom, delom. |
| 2. Deuych, delych (-ech.
-ot.) | 2. Deuoch, deloch. |
| 3. Delo. | 3. Deuont, delont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. — | Pl. { See pl. of <i>fut. indic.</i> |
| 2. Tyred, dyred, (tyre, dyre.) | |
| 3. Deued, deled, (dawed, doed.) | |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see *future perfect*. Plup. see *plup. indic.*
Imperf. see *imperf. indic.*

INFINITIVE MOOD. Dyfod, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

PARTICIPLES. Yn dyfod, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

288. IMPERSONAL FORM OF DYFOD.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. deuir, delir, dewir. Imperf. deuid, delid. Perf. deuwyd or deued (daethwyd, daethpwyd, doed.) Plup. daethid, delsid. Fut. deuir, delir, dewir, deir, doir. Fut. perf. deuer, deler, dawer, doer.

IMPER. MOOD. = *future perfect*.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr. = *fut. perf.* Imperf. deuid, delid, dewid, doid. Plup. = *plup. indic.*

GWNEYD or GWNEUTHUR, *to do.*

289. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Wyf yn gwneyd, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

Imperfect.

- | | |
|---------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Gwnawn, gwnelwn. | 1. Gwnaem, gwnelem. |
| 2. Gwnait, gwnelit. | 2. Gwnaech, gwnelech. |
| 3. Gwnai, gwnelai. | 3. Gwnaent, gwnelent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. Gwnaethym, (gwnelais.) | 1. Gwnaethom, gwnelsom. |
| 2. Gwnaethost, (gwnelaist.) | 2. Gwnaethoch, gwnelsoch. |
| 3. Gwnaeth, (gwnelodd.) | 3. Gwnaethant, gwnelsant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. Gwnaethwn, gwnelswn. | 1. Gwnaethem, gwnelsem. |
| 2. Gwnaethit, gwnelsit. | 2. Gwnaethech, gwnelsech. |
| 3. Gwnaethai, gwnelsai. | 3. Gwnaethent, gwnelsent. |

Future.

- | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Gwnaf, gwnelaf. | 1. Gwnawn, gwnelwn. |
| 2. Gwnai, gwneli. | 2. Gwnewch, gwnelwch. |
| 3. Gwna, gwnaiff, gwnel. | 3. Gwnânt, gwnelant. |

Future perfect.

- | | |
|------------------------------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwnelwyf, gwnelof. | 1. Gwnelom. |
| 2. Gwnelych, gwneloch,
gwnelot. | 2. Gwneloch. |
| 3. Gwnelo. | 3. Gwnelont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. — | 1. Gwnawn, (gwnelwn.) |
| 2. Gwna. | 2. Gwnewch, (gwnelwch.) |
| 3. Gwnaed, gwneled. | 3. Gwnânt, (gwnelant.) |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see *fut. perfect.* Imperfect: see *imperf. indic.*
 Pluperfect: see *plup. indic.*

INFINITIVE MOOD. Gwneyd or gwneuthur, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

PARTICIPLES. Yn gwneyd or gwneuthur, &c. see "*dysgu.*"

290. PASSIVE FORM OF GWNEYD OR GWNEUTHUR.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. gwneir, gwnelir. Imperf. gwneid, gwnelid. Perf. gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd. Plup. gwnaethid, gwnelsid. Fut. gwneir, gwnelir. Fut. perf. gwnaer, gwneler.

IMPER. MOOD. Gwnaer, gwneler.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr.=*fut. perf.* Imperf.=*imperf. indic.* Plup.=*plup. indic.*

GWYBOD, *to know.*

291. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

- | | |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwn. | 1. Gwyddom. |
| 2. Gwyddost. | 2. Gwyddoch. |
| 3. Gŵyr. | 3. Gwyddant. |

Imperfect.

- | | |
|-------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwyddwn. | 1. Gwyddem. |
| 2. Gwyddit. | 2. Gwyddech. |
| 3. Gwyddai. | 3. Gwyddent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwybum. | 1. Gwybuom. |
| 2. Gwybuost. | 2. Gwybuoch. |
| 3. Gwybu. | 3. Gwybuant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------|
| 1. Gwybuaswn. | 1. Gwybuasem. |
| 2. Gwybuasit. | 2. Gwybuasech. |
| 3. Gwybuasai. | 3. Gwybuasent. |

Future.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------|
| 1. Gwybyddaf. | 1. Gwybyddwn. |
| 2. Gwybyddi. | 2. Gwybyddwch. |
| 3. Gwybydd. | 3. Gwybyddant. |

Future perfect.

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. Gwybyddwyf, (gwypwyf, -of.) | 1. Gwybyddom, (gwypom.) |
| 2. Gwybyddych, (gwypych, -ech, -ot.) | 2. Gwybyddoch, (gwypoch.) |
| 3. Gwybyddo, (gwypo.) | 3. Gwybyddont, (gwypont.) |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. — | 1. Gwybyddwn, (gwypwn.) |
| 2. Gwybydd. | 2. Gwybyddwch, (gwypwch.) |
| 3. Gwybydded, (gwyped.) | 3. Gwybyddant, (gwypant.) |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see *future perfect*.

Imperfect.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| 1. Gwyddwn, gwybyddwn,
(gwypwn.) | 1. Gwyddem, gwybyddem,
(gwypem.) |
| 2. Gwyddit, gwybyddit,
(gwypit.) | 2. Gwyddech, gwybyddech,
(gwypech.) |
| 3. Gwyddai, gwybyddai,
(gwypai.) | 3. Gwyddent, gwybyddent,
(gwypent.) |

Pluperfect: see *plup. indic.*

INFINITIVE MOOD. Gwybod, &c.: see "*dysgu*."

PARTICIPLES. Yn gwybod, &c.: see "*dysgu*."

292. PASSIVE FORM OF GWYBOD.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. gwyddir, gwyddys, (gwys.) Imperf. gwyddid. Perf. gwybuwyd, (gwypwyd.) Plup. gwybuasid. Fut. gwyddir, gwybyddir. Fut. perf. gwybydder, (gwyper.)

IMPER. MOOD. Gwybydder, (gwyper.)

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr.=*fut. perfect*. Imperf. gwyddid, gwybyddid, (gwypid.) Plup. gwybuasid.

ADWAEN°, *to be acquainted with, to recognise*.

293. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------------|
| 1. Adwaen. | 1. Adwaenom. |
| 2. Adwaenost. | 2. Adwaenoch. |
| 3. Edwyn. | 3. Adwaenant (-ont.) |

° Adwaen (quasi *adwn*) is compounded of *ad*=re and *gwn*=cognosco.

Imperfect.

- | | |
|--------------|---------------|
| 1. Adwaenwn. | 1. Adwaenem. |
| 2. Adwaenit. | 2. Adwaenech. |
| 3. Adwaenai. | 3. Adwaenent. |

Perfect. (fr. *adnabod*.)

- | | |
|---------------|---------------|
| 1. Adnabum. | 1. Adnabuom. |
| 2. Adnabuost. | 2. Adnabuoch. |
| 3. Adnabu. | 3. Adnabuont. |

Pluperfect. (fr. *adnabod*.)

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. Adnabuaswn. | 1. Adnabuasem. |
| 2. Adnabuasit. | 2. Adnabuasech. |
| 3. Adnabuasai. | 3. Adnebuasent. |

Future. (fr. *adnabod*.)

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. Adnabyddaf. | 1. Adnabyddwn. |
| 2. Adnabyddi. | 2. Adnabyddwch. |
| 3. Adnebydd. | 3. Adnabyddant. |

Future perfect.

- | | |
|---------------------------|---------------|
| 1. Adwaenwyf, (-of.) | 1. Adwaenom. |
| 2. Adwaenych, (-ech -ot.) | 2. Adwaenoch. |
| 3. Adwaeno. | 3. Adwaenont. |

Or fr. *adnabod*; as,

- | | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. Adnabyddwyf, (adnapwyf.) | 1. Adnabyddom, (adnapom.) |
| 2. Adnabyddych, (adnapych.) | 2. Adnabyddoch, (adnapoch.) |
| 3. Adnabyddo, (adnapo.) | 3. Adnabyddont, (adnapont.) |

IMPERATIVE MOOD. (fr. *adnabod*.)

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. — | 1. Adnabyddwn. |
| 2. Adnebydd. | 2. Adnabyddwch. |
| 3. Adnabydded. | 3. Adnabyddant. |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see *future perfect*.

Imperfect: see *imperf. indic.*; or from *adnabod*; as,

- | | |
|---------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. Adnabyddwn, (adnapwn.) | 1. Adnabyddem, (adnapem.) |
| 2. Adnabyddit, (adnapit.) | 2. Adnabyddech, (adnaprech.) |
| 3. Adnabyddai, (adnapai.) | 3. Adnabyddent, (adnapent.) |

Pluperfect: see *plup. indic.*

INFINITIVE MOOD. Adwaen, &c.: see "*dysgu.*"

PARTICIPLES. Yn adwaen, &c.: see "*dysgu.*"

294. PASSIVE FORM OF ADWAEN.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. adwaenir. Imperf. adwaenid. Perf. adnabuwyd. Plup. adnabuasid. Fut. adnabyddir. Fut. perf. adwaener, adnabydder, (adnaper.)

IMPER. MOOD. Adwaener, adnabydder, (adnaper.)

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr.=*fut. perfect.* Imperf. adwaenid. Plup. adnabuasid.

CAEL OR CAFFAEL, to have^p=to get.

295. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Wyf yn cael or caffael, &c.: see "*dysgu.*"

Imperfect.

- | | |
|--------------------|----------------------|
| 1. Cawn, (caffwn.) | 1. Caem, (caffem.) |
| 2. Cait, (ceffit.) | 2. Caech, (caffech.) |
| 3. Cui, (ceffai.) | 3. Caent, (caffent.) |

Perfect.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|-------------|
| 1. Cefais, (cês.) | 1. Cawsom. |
| 2. Cefaiet, (cêst.) | 2. Cawsoch. |
| 3. Cafodd, (câdd, cafas, câs.) | 3. Cawsant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|------------|-------------|
| 1. Cawswn. | 1. Cawsem. |
| 2. Cawsit. | 2. Cawsech. |
| 3. Cawsai. | 3. Cawsent. |

Future.

- | | |
|-----------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Cûf. | 1. Cawn. |
| 2. Cai, cei, (ceffi.) | 2. Cewch. |
| 3. Ca, Cuiff. | 3. Cânt, (caffant.) |

^p To have=*to possess*, is expressed in Welsh by an inflection of *bod* with a pronominal preposition; as *y mae genyf*=*there is with me.* (see §§. 305, 306.)

Future perfect.

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Caffwyf, (cafwyf, -of.) | 1. Caffom, (cafom.) |
| 2. Ceffych, (cefyfch, -ech,
-ot.) | 2. Caffoch, (cafoch.) |
| 3. Caffo, (cafo.) | 3. Caffont, (cafont.) |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|------------------|------------------------------|
| 3. Caed, caffed. | 3. Cânt, (caffant, caffont.) |
|------------------|------------------------------|

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see *fut. perfect*. Imperfect: see *imperf. indic*.

Pluperfect: see *plup. indic*.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Cael or caffael, &c.: see "*dysgu*."

PARTICIPLES. Yn cael or caffael, &c.: see "*dysgu*."

296. PASSIVE FORM OF CAEL OR CAFFAEL.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. ceir, ceffir. Imperf. ceid, ceffid. Perf. cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd. Plup. cawsid. Fut. ceir, ceffir. Fut. perf. caer, caffer.

IMPER. MOOD. Caer, caffer.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr.=*fut. perf*. Imperf.=*imperf. indic*. Plup. cawsid.

297. Chwerthin, *to laugh*, usually changes *th* into *dd* in the finite tenses; as chwarddaf, chwarddais, &c.

Clywed, *to hear*, has sometimes in the perfect *clybum*, *clybuost*, *clybu*, &c.; passive, *clybuwyd*, being the regular perfect of the obsolete *clybod*.

Rhoi, *to give*, has sometimes *dyry*, in 3 pers. sing. fut. indic., for *rho* or *rhy*; in 2 pers. sing. imper. *dyro* for *rho*.

Dywedyd, *to say*, has sometimes, in 3 pers. sing. perf., *dywawd*, *dyfod* or *dywad*, for *dywedodd*; in 3 pers. pres. and fut. *dywyd* or *dywaid*, for *dywed*, or *dyweda*.

Cymmeryd, *to take*, has sometimes *cymmerth* for *cymmerodd*, he took.

Ysgwyd, *to shake*, takes the form *ysgydw* in finite tenses; as *ysgydwaf*, *ysgydwais*, &c.

Codi, *to raise*, or *rise*, has sometimes *cwyd* in 3 pers. sing. fut. indic. and 2 pers. sing. imper. for *côd* or *coda*.

Dwyn, to bring, forms the finite tenses from *dygyd* (= *ducere*); as *dygaf*, *dygais*, &c. The 3 pers. sing. perfect has *dug* or *dygodd*; the 3 pers. sing. fut., *dwg* or *dyg*; the 2 pers. sing. imper. *dwg*.

Canu, to sing, sometimes makes *cânt* in 3 pers. pl. of perf. indic.: *gwânau*, to pierce, makes *gwânt*.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

298. MEDD, to say. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.		Imperfect.	
1. Meddaf.	1. Meddwn.	1. Meddwn.	1. Meddem.
2. Meddi.	2. Meddwch.	2. Meddit.	2. Meddech.
3. Medd.	3. Meddant.	3. Meddai.	3. Meddent.

299. EB^a, to say; 'quoth.'

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Sin. Ebe fi, Ebe ti, Ebe efe. Pl. Ebe ni, ebe chwi, ebe hwy.

(a) *Ebe* is also written *eb*, *ebr*, *ebyr*, or *ebai*.

300. PIAU, (= L. *po-ssideo*) to own. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Pres. Sin. Mi, ti, efe a biau.	Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a biau.
Imperf. Sin. Mi, ti, efe a bioedd.	Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a bioedd.
Fut. Sin. Mi, ti, efe a bieu-tydd.	Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a bieu-tydd.

SUBJ. MOOD.

Imperf. Sin. Mi, ti, efe a bieu-tyddai.	Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a bieu-tyddai.
---	----------------------------------

(a) The particle *a* is most frequently omitted, and *p* used instead of *b* (e. g. *mi piau*); but the above form is more correct. *Piau* is by some written *pia*; and *pivedd* is written *piodd*.

301. **HWDE** (N. W.) **HWRE** (S. W.) are used only in the Imper.

Sin. Hwde or hwre, take thou. Pl. Hwdiwh or hwriwh, take ye.

302. **Moes**, to give. The Imper. only is used.

Sin. Moes, give thou. Pl. Moeswh, give ye.

^a Cf. *εἶπον*: *ἔπος*.

It also forms an auxiliary, similar to the Eng. 'let;' as moes glywed, *let me hear*; moes i ni fyned, *come, let us go*.

BYW, *to live*, and MARW, *to die*.

303. *Byw* and *marw*, having no inflections, borrow the auxiliary verb *bod* to express their various tenses; as wyf yn byw, *I live*; wyf yn marw, *I am dying*.

304. *Byw* and *marw* are also used adjectively, corresponding to *alive* and *dead*; but in construction they have this difference: when verbs, they preserve their *radical* initials after their particle 'yn;' when adjectives, they assume the middle sound after 'yn,' expressed or understood.

Verbs.

Y mae yn byw, *he is living*.

Y mae yn marw, *he is dying*.

Adjectives.

Y mae yn fyw, *he is alive*.

Y mae yn farw, *he is dead*.

(a) The adjectives *byw* and *marw*, in construction with the tenses *bum*, *byddwn*, *buaswn*, *byddaf*, are usually translated into English by the verbs *live*, and *die*; as

Bu fyw, *he lived*.

Bu farw, *he died*.

Y MAE GENYF, "*I have*."

305. The tenses of *have*=*possess* are expressed in Welsh by the 3d person of the verb *bod*, and a *preposition with its case*.

306. The prepositions are *gan*, with, *gyda*, with, and *i*, to; so that the sentence (e. g.) "I have a book," may be expressed by,

a. Y mae genyf lyfr=*there is with me a book*.

b. Y mae gyda fi lyfr=*there is with me a book*.

c. Y mae i mi lyfr=*there is to me a book*.

(a) With this construction compare the Latin "*est mihi*," and the Greek ἐστὶ μοι.

(b) *Y mae genyf* is peculiar to the dialect of North Wales; *y mae gyda fi* and *y mae i mi*, to that of South Wales.

Present, *I have a book*.

1. Mae genyf lyfr.

1. Mae genym lyfr.

2. Mae genyt lyfr.

2. Mae genych lyfr.

3. Mae ganddo, or ganddi,

3. Mae ganddynt lyfr.

lyfr.

And so on in the other tenses, substituting the third pers. of the proper tense for *mae*; as, imperf. *yr oedd genyf lyfr*; perf. *bu genyf lyfr*.

307. The participle, equivalent to "having," is expressed by *a* or *ag* (or *ac*) and a *prep. with its case*.

- | | |
|---|----------------------|
| 1. A chenylf lyfr, <i>having</i>
a book. | 1. A chenym lyfr. |
| 2. A chenyty lyfr. | 2. A chenytych lyfr. |
| 3. { A chanddo lyfr. | 3. A chanddynt lyfr. |
| { A chanddi lyfr. | |

Or, *Ag i mi lyfr, ag i ti lyfr, &c.*

308. *Gan* and *gyda*, accompanied by an adjective, express other notions.

Mae yn dda genyf, or gyda fi, = *it is good with me; I am glad.*

Mae yn rhyfedd genyf, *I am surprised.*

Mae yn ddrwg genyf, *I am sorry.*

Mae yn edifar genyf, *I regret.*

309. So also *ar*, upon, with a noun.

Mae arnaf ofn = *there is on me fear; I am afraid.*

Mae arnaf eisieu, *I want.*

Mae arnaf chwant, *I am inclined.*

Mae arnaf ddyled, *I owe.*

Mae gorfod arnaf, *I am compelled.*

THE ARTICLE.

310. The Welsh language has no indefinite article, corresponding to *a* or *an* of the English.

311. The *definite article* is *y*^r or *yr* (contracted 'r), corresponding to *the*, and, like it, defines a noun, or a word standing for a noun.

312. *Y* is used before a *consonant*; *yr* before a *vowel* and the letter *h*; 'r before a *vowel* or a *consonant*, if the preceding word ends with a vowel.

Yr aur; *yr* haul; *y* galaru; *y* cyfiawn; *y* tad a'r fam.

(a) The articles *y* and *yr* are to be distinguished from the affirmative adverbs *y* and *yr* (= *it is*), and the conjunctions *y* and *yr* (= *that*.)

ADVERBS.

313. Adverbs may be divided into *simple* and *compound*. By 'simple adverbs,' we mean such as express the notion of an adverb by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary in point of etymology; as *yna*, *yma*, *allan*,

^r *Y* is probably cognate with the Gr. article *ὁ* or *ἡ*.

ymaith, &c. By 'compound adverbs' are meant such as express the notion of an adverb by two or more words; as *oddi uchod*, *o hyn allan*.

314. Many of the adverbs are really substantives, or substantive words in a state of construction. Some may be still looked upon as such; but others, having thrown aside the governing and the concomitant words, and preserving only the mere substantive, are conveniently reckoned as adverbs.

315. The following may be looked upon as substantives in a state of construction: *yn y fan*=on the spot; immediately. *Ar wahan*=on a separation; apart. *Ym mron*=on the slope; nearly. *O hyn allan*=from this out, henceforth.

316. These may be reckoned as adverbs, though, strictly, substantives under the government of prepositions: *Sut* (for *ym mha sut*) how? *Weithian* (for *ar y waith hon*) now. *Lle* (for *ym mha lle*) where?

317. *Motion to* is often expressed by the prep. *i*, with another word significant of place; as *i fyny*=to the mountain; upward. *I maes*=to the field; out. *I lawr*=to the ground; downward. *I mewn*=to within; in.

318. *Motion from* is often expressed by *oddi* and *o*, from, with another word significant of place; as *obry*=from the hill; below. *Oddi uchod*, from above. *Oddi yma*=from here; hence. *Oddi acw*, from yonder. *Oddi isod*, from below.

319. Some adverbs are formed by uniting a whole sentence, so as to form one compound word. *Sef* (namely) is compounded of *ys*, is, and *ef*, he or it, and literally signifies *it* or *that is*. *Malpai* (as if it were) is divisible into *mal*, as, *pe*, if, *bai*, were. *Ysgatfydd* (perhaps) is formed of *ys -gad -bydd*=allow it will be, or occur.

320. *Adverbs of quality* are formed from adjectives by setting before them the particle *yn* (hence called '*yn adverbial*') and changing their initial consonant into the middle sound. [Their English equivalents are made by suffixing *ly* to the adjective.]

Uniawn, *upright*.

Cyfiawn, *just*.

Drwg, *bad*.

Teg, *fair*.

Yn uniawn, *uprightly*.

Yn gyfiawn, *justly*.

Yn ddrwg, *badly*.

Yn deg, *fairly*.

(a) 'These adverbs are capable of the same degrees of comparison as the adjectives, and by the same characteristic forms;' as *yn decach*, &c. more fairly.

321. *Adverbs of number* are made by adding *gwaith* or *tro* to any numeral adjective.

Unwaith, <i>once</i> .	Untro, <i>once</i> .
Dwywaith, <i>twice</i> .	Deudro, <i>twice</i> .
Teirgwaith, <i>three times</i> .	Trithro, <i>three times</i> . [See §. 157.]

(a) These are, really, substantives under the government of such prep. as *ar* or *am*.

322. *Adverbs of order* are formed by setting '*yn adverbial*' before ordinal numbers, and the usual terms of succession.

Yn gyntaf, <i>first</i> .	Yn olaf, <i>lastly</i> .
Yn ail, <i>secondly</i> .	Yn ddiweddaf, <i>finally</i> .

323. CLASSIFICATION OF ADVERBS. The principal heads, into which adverbs are usually divided, are the following. **Adverbs of quality.** (See above.) **Adverbs of number.** (See above.) **Adverbs of order.** (See above.)

324. *Adverbs of place.*

Acw(= <i>ekēi</i>), <i>yonder</i> .	Rhag llaw, <i>henceforth</i> .
Adref, <i>home</i> .	Oddi yma, <i>hence</i> .
Allan, <i>out</i> .	Oddi yna, <i>thence</i> .
Fry, <i>above</i> .	Oddi yno, <i>from that place</i> .
Draw, <i>yonder</i> .	Oddi uchod, <i>from above</i> .
Hwnt, <i>away</i> .	Ym mlaen, <i>forward</i> .
Isod, <i>below</i> .	Ar wahan, <i>apart</i> .
Uchod, <i>above</i> .	O'r neilldu, <i>aside</i> .
Yma, <i>here</i> .	Oddi fewn, <i>from within</i> .
Yna, there (<i>in sight</i>).	Oddi allan, <i>from without</i> .
Ymaith, <i>hence</i> .	I fyny, <i>upward</i> .
Obry, <i>below</i> .	I lawr, <i>downward</i> .
Tawodd, <i>underneath</i> .	I waered, <i>downward</i> .
Trnodd, <i>through</i> .	

325. Adverbs of time.

Weithian, }	Toc, <i>presently</i> .
Weithion, } <i>now</i> .	Eto, <i>again</i> .
Gynt, <i>formerly</i> .	Yn awr, <i>now</i> .
Doe, <i>yesterday</i> .	Newydd, <i>newly, just</i> .
Heddyw, <i>to-day</i> .	Yr awr hon,
Eisoos, <i>already</i> .	Yrawron (vulgò <i>yrŵan</i>) } <i>now</i> .
Erioed, <i>ever</i> .	Yleni, <i>this year</i> .
Maes o law, <i>presently</i> .	Y fory, <i>to-morrow</i> .
Beunydd, <i>daily</i> .	Yn fore, <i>early</i> .
Heno, <i>to-night</i> .	Bob amser, <i>always</i> .
Byth, <i>ever</i> .	Yn wastad, (cf. <i>L. vastatus</i>)
Weithiau, <i>at times</i> .	= <i>evenly; continually</i> .

326. Adverbs of quantity.

I gyd, <i>wholly</i> .	Yng nghyd, <i>altogether</i> .
Braidd, }	Llawer, <i>much</i> .
O'r braidd, } <i>scarcely</i> .	Llei lai, <i>less and less</i> .
Prin, <i>scarcely</i> .	Mwy fwy, <i>more and more</i> .

327. Adverbs of doubting.

Ef allai, }	Hwyrach, <i>perhaps</i> .
Fe allai, } <i>possibly</i> .	Ysgatfydd, <i>peradventure</i> .
Ond odid, }	
Odid, } <i>probably</i> .	

328. Adverbs of negation.

Ni, nid, nis, <i>not</i> .	Nage, (nac-ie) <i>no</i> .
Na, nad, nas, <i>not; that . .</i>	Dim, an auxiliary negative.
<i>not</i> .	Mo, (dim-o) an auxiliary ne-
Nac, <i>not</i> .	<i>gative</i> .

329. Adverbs of affirmation.

Yn ddiau, <i>undoubtedly</i> .	Do, <i>yes</i> .
Yn wir, <i>truly</i> .	Ië, <i>yes</i> .
Yn ddilys, <i>certainly</i> .	Nid amgen, <i>not otherwise</i> .

330. Adverbs of interrogation.

A, <i>simple interrogative</i> .	Sut, pa sut, <i>how?</i>
Ai, <i>is it?</i>	Lle, pa le, <i>where?</i>
Ai ni, nid, or nis, <i>is it not?</i>	Pam, Pa ham, <i>why?</i>
Oni, onid, onis, <i>is it not?</i>	Pa fodd, pa wedd, <i>how?</i>
Ai ië, <i>is it so?</i>	

331. Adverbs of comparison.

Cyn (can), <i>as</i> .	Rhy, <i>too</i> .
Go, <i>rather</i> .	Po, (= <i>quo</i> .)
Iawn, <i>very</i> .	Mwy, <i>more</i> .
Lled, <i>rather</i> .	Llai, <i>less</i> .
Mor, <i>as</i> .	Mwyaf, <i>most</i> .
Pur, <i>very</i> .	Lleiaf, <i>least</i> .

332. Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.

A; as 'Ddw a ddywedodd.'
 Y; as 'Yna y dywedodd.'
 Yd; as 'Basaf dwfr man *yd* lefair.'
 Ydd; as 'Cyflym *ydd* a rym yr oes.'
 Yr; as 'Hwyr yr erys Duw cyn taro.'

(a) *E, ef, fe, and fo*, called by some *auxiliary affirmative adverbs*, are more properly *auxiliary pronouns*.

333. In Welsh, as in other languages, many of the adverbs are to be distinguished from conjunctions and prepositions by their *use* and *signification*, not by their form; for it happens that the same word is in one place an adverb, and in another a conjunction or a preposition. In the sentence, "Deuaf *yna* y fory," I will come *there* to-morrow, *yna* is an adverb; but in the sentence, "Os felly, *yna* mi a ddeuaf," if so, *then* I will come, *yna* is a conjunction.

334. Conjunctional adverbs. Such words as *cyn, pryd, pan, wedi, tra, (whilst,) hyd, hyd oni, hyd nes, &c.* are by some called *adverbs*, by others *conjunctions*, and by others *conjunctional adverbs*, on the ground that they combine the notion of both an adverb and of a conjunction. In the sentence, "I will visit you, when I return," the word *when* includes the notion of an adverb, as it refers to a *point of time*; but it includes also the notion of a conjunction, as it connects the clause "when I return," with the preceding, "I will visit you." But as these particles have an influence over their verbs, and require a particular construction, it is better to disregard their adverbial import, and classify them under conjunctions.

CONJUNCTIONS.

335. "Conjunctions are usually divided into the two principal classes of *conjunctives* and *disjunctives*." These

again are capable of subdivisions, of which the following are the most important.

a) Copulative. A, ac, *and*. Hefyd, *also*.

β) Disjunctive. Neu, *or*.

Naill ai ai, neu, ynte, *either* *or*.

Na or nac na or nac, *neither* *nor*.

γ) Suppositive (or hypothetical). O, od, os, (formerly *or*,) *if*. Pe, ped, pes, pei, *if*. Oni, onid, onis, *if* . . *not*, *except*. Oddieithr, oddigerth, *except*.

δ) Concessive. Er, serch, cyd, *although*.

ε) Causal. O achos, o herwydd, o waith, o blegyd, am, (formerly o ethryb, o blaid,) *because*. Gan, can, *since*. Yn gymmaint ag, *inasmuch as*. Canys, *for*.

(a) O is sometimes omitted in o achos o herwydd, &c.

ζ) The conjunctions of motive or purpose. Mal, fal, fel, megys, modd, *in order that*. Rhag, *in order that* . . *not*.

η) The conjunctions of effect or result. Mal, fal, fel, *so that*.

θ) Explanatory. Y, mai, taw, *that*.

ι) Temporal. Pan, pryd, *when*. Wedi, gwedi, ar ol, yn ol, *after*. Tra, *whilst*. Cyhyd ag, cyd (for cyhyd), cyd ag, *as long as*. Er pan, *since*. Hyd, nes, tan, hyd oni, (onid, onis), hyd nes, *until*. Cyn gynted ag, gynted ag, *as soon as*. Pryd bynag, *whenever*.

κ) Comparative. Na, nag, (no, nog,) *than*. Mal, fal, fel, megys (meis), ys, *as*. Ag, *as*.

λ) Adversative. Ond, eithr, *but*. Namyn, onid, oddieithr, oddigerth, *except*. Eto, er hyn, er hyny, *yet*, *notwithstanding*. (Hagen, anllai, eisoes, *nevertheless*.)

μ) Illative (or inferring.) Yna, *then*. Am hyny, gan hyny, o achos hyny, &c. *therefore*.

PREPOSITIONS.

336. Prepositions may be divided into the following classes.

a) Simple prepositions are such as express the notion of a preposition by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary as to etymology; as *am*, *mewn*, *gerfydd*.

β.) Compound prepositions are such as express the notion of a preposition by two or more words; as *ar led*, *oddi amgylch*, *tu mewn i*.

γ.) Pronominal prepositions are such as enter into combination with personal pronouns; as *genyf*, with *me*, from the prep. *gan*, with, and the pronoun *mi* or *fi*, me.

δ.) Inseparable prepositions, or prefixes, are such as enter into combination with nouns, adjectives, &c. to form compound words; as *af* in *afwyydd*; *gor* in *gorthrwm*; *dy* in *dygynnull*.

SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

337. As the government of the prepositions is of great importance in the Welsh language, it will be useful here to arrange them under different heads, that the student may with greater facility acquaint himself with the governing power of each.

338. *a. Prepositions proper.* Some may be denominated 'prepositions proper,' or those that seem to have the greatest claim to such a name, in opposition to nouns used prepositionally by an ellipsis of a particle.

Of prepositions proper

339. a) The following govern the radical sound.

Cyn, <i>before</i> .	Heibio, <i>by, past</i> .
Er, <i>for; since</i> .	Mewn, <i>in</i> .
Erys, er's (vulgo <i>es</i>), <i>since</i> .	Myn, (=μῆν) <i>by</i> (in swearing.)
Erbyn, <i>against; by</i> .	Rhag, (=præ) <i>from; for</i> .
Ger, gar, } <i>by, at</i> .	Serch, <i>notwithstanding</i> .
Cer, car, }	Rhwng, <i>between</i> .
Gerfydd, cerfydd, <i>by</i> .	Uwch, (uch), <i>above</i> .
Gwedi, wedi, }	
Cwedi, }	

340. *b*) These govern the **middle** sound.

Am (=ἀμφί), <i>about, on account of, for.</i> (cf. um. Ger.)	I', <i>to, into.</i>
Ar, <i>on, upon.</i>	Tros, dros, <i>over; for.</i>
At, <i>to, close to.</i>	Trwy, drwy, <i>through.</i>
Gan, can, <i>with: by.</i>	Wrth, <i>close to, by; to.</i>
Heb, <i>without.</i>	O", <i>out of, from.</i>
Hyd', <i>as far as.</i>	Tan, dan, <i>under; until.</i>
	(cf. unter, Ger.)

(*a*) The prep. *oddi*, from, usually governs the *middle*: but sometimes the *radical*.

(*b*) *Idd*, to; *odd* and the obsolete *oc*, from, precede nouns, only when they have an article or its equivalent before them; as *idd y tŷ*; *odd eu tai*.

341. *c*) The preposition *yn* governs the **nasal** sound.

(*a*) In certain cases *yn* becomes *ym* and *yng*. [See §. 84, 85.]

(*b*) "*Yn* participial" governs the *radical*; "*yn* adverbial," and "*yn* apposition," govern the *middle*. Thus the different functions of the word *yn* are distinguished by its government.

342. *d*) These govern the **aspirate** of class first (*c, p, t*;) and radical of classes second and third, (*g, b, d*; *ll, m, rh.*)

A^x, *with.* [*Ag* before vowels.]

Gyda, cyda, with. [*Gydag, cydag*, before vowels.]

Tua, towards. [*Tuag*, before vowels.]

Efo, with. *Tra, beyond.*

(*a*) A circumflex is usually placed over *a* when a preposition; as *lladd â chleddyf*, to kill with a sword.

343. *β*. Substantive prepositions. Some prepositions may be termed 'substantive prepositions,' or substantives employed as prepositions.

* *Hyd* and *ar hyd* sometimes govern the *radical*. "Ar hyd llwybrau uniondeb." Ps. xxvii. 11.

† *I* governs the pron. *ti* and its compounds in the *radical*; as "*peri i ti dewi*:" it governs *mi* and its compounds, and *mewn* and *maes*, in the *rad.* or *middle*; as "*dywed i mi* or *i fi*."

‡ *O* in some cases governs the *rad.* or *middle*; as *o mewn* or *o fewn*; *o tan* or *o dan*.

§ *A* and its compounds govern the pron. *mi* in the *middle*; as *gyda fi*.

344. A substantive, when followed by another substantive in the possessive case, governs it in the *radical* sound; e. g. "planwr gwinllan," where we see that *gwinllan* retains its *radical* sound after *planwr*.

345. Accordingly we find that *all substantive prepositions govern the radical sound*.

Achos (=causâ),	on account of.	Plegyd,	because of.
Cylch,	} about.	Gwaith [†] ,	because of.
Amgylch,		Herwydd,	} because of.
Parth,	} as to.	(Erwydd,)	
Parthed,		Traws,	} over.
		Draws,	

COMPOUND PREPOSITIONS.

346. Compound prepositions are made up (1) Of two or more simple prepositions; as *oddi ar, tuag at am*. (2) Of prepositions and substantives, (or substantive words); as *ar led, tu cefn i*.

347. As some of these end with a preposition, (*oddi ar, hyd at,*) and some with a substantive, (*ar led, ger bron,*) they are hence divisible into two classes.

348. *a. Compounds ending with a preposition.* These govern the same sound as the simple prepositions with which they end. For example, *ar* governs the *middle* sound; as *ar fynydd*: hence its compound *oddi ar* governs the *same* sound; as *oddi ar fynydd*.

Am dan,	about.	I . . erbyn,	against; (as "daeth i'm herbyn.")
Gor is,	below.	Ar gyfer i,	opposite to.
Gor uwch,	above.	Ar gyferyd i,	opposite to.
O fewn,	within.	Cyferbyn â,	opposite to.
O dan,	under.	Cyfarwyneb â,	opposite to.
Oddi ar,	} from upon; from.	Gwydderbyn â,	opposite to.
Odd ar,		Parth â,	towards.
Oddi dan,	from under; under.	Parth ag at,	towards.
Oddi am,	} from about.	Tuag at am,	as to.
Oddi am dan,		Hyd at,	as far as.
Oddi wrth,	from beside; from.	Hyd ar,	as far as.
Yn erbyn,	against, in opposition to.	Hyd yn,	as far as.

[†] Cf. ἔργον, ergo: *victoriæ ergo*.

Yng nghyda, <i>together with.</i>	Tu draw i, } <i>beyond.</i>
Yng ngwrthwyneb i, <i>against.</i>	Tu hwnt i, }
Oddi maes i, } <i>from without.</i>	Tu isaf i, <i>below.</i>
Oddi allan i, }	Tu ol i, }
Oddi mewn i, <i>from within;</i>	Tu yn ol i, } <i>behind.</i>
<i>within.</i>	Tu mewn i, <i>within.</i>
Tu blaen i, <i>before.</i>	Tu uchaf i, <i>above.</i>
Tu cefn i, <i>behind.</i>	Tu yma i, <i>this side.</i>
Tu maes i, }	Tu yna i, <i>that side.</i>
Tu allan i, } <i>outside.</i>	

349. *β.* Compounds ending with a substantive. These govern the radical sound, like substantive prepositions.

Am ben ² = <i>about the head;</i>	O blegid, } <i>because of.</i>
<i>on; at.</i>	O blaid, }
Ar ben ² = <i>on the head; on;</i>	O herwydd, } <i>because of.</i>
<i>at.</i>	O erwydd, }
Ar hyd, <i>along.</i>	O ethryb, <i>because of.</i>
Ar led, <i>over.</i>	O waith, <i>because of.</i>
Ar ol, <i>after, behind.</i>	O gylch, }
Ar draws, <i>over.</i>	O amgylch, } <i>about.</i>
Ar warthaf, <i>upon.</i>	Oddi amgylch, <i>from about;</i>
Er mwyn, <i>for the sake of.</i>	<i>about.</i>
Ger bron, <i>in presence of, be-</i>	O barth, } <i>as to.</i>
<i>fore.</i>	O barthed, }
Ger gwydd, <i>in presence of,</i>	O ddeutn, } <i>about.</i>
<i>before.</i>	O beutu, }
Ger wyneb, <i>in presence of,</i>	O gwmpas, <i>about.</i>
<i>before.</i>	O ran, <i>as for.</i>
Ger llaw, <i>at hand; near.</i>	Uwch ben= <i>over head;</i>
Rhag bron, <i>in presence of,</i>	<i>above.</i>
<i>before.</i>	Uwch law= <i>over hand; above.</i>
Rhag wyneb, <i>in presence of,</i>	Yn ol, <i>behind, according to.</i>
<i>before.</i>	Yng nghylch= <i>in a circle;</i>
O flaen, <i>before.</i>	<i>about.</i>
Heb law, <i>besides.</i>	Ym mhlith, <i>among.</i>
Is law= <i>below the hand;</i>	I blith= <i>to among; among.</i>
<i>below.</i>	Ym mysg, <i>among.</i>
O achos= <i>from the cause of;</i>	Yng ngwydd, <i>in the presence</i>
<i>because of.</i>	<i>of; before.</i>

² Chwerthin am ben or ar ben, *to laugh at.*

Yn ymyl=*at the side of*; Wrth law=*by the hand of*;
close to. beside.

PRONOMINAL PREPOSITIONS.

350. The prepositions that admit of being combined with the personal pronouns, so as to form a class of words, which *Dr. Pughe* very properly calls 'pronominal prepositions,' are the following.

a) Simple: *ar*; *at*; (*dar*;) *er*; *gan* (*can*;) *heb*; *hyd*; *han* or *hon*, (proceeding from); *i*; *rhag*; *rhwng*; *tan* or *dan*; *tros* or *dros*; *trwy* or *drwy*; *wrth*; *yn*.

b) Compound: *am dan*; *o dan* or *tan*; *oddi dan* or *tan*; *oddi ar*; *oddi wrth*; *oddi gan*; *oddi am dan*; *oddi rhwng*; *o han* or *hon*; *hyd yn*; *hyd ar*; *hyd at*; *parth ag at*.

351. When personal pronouns are suffixed to these particles, they suffer their vowels to be changed and inverted, to render the words more harmonious, and to give a greater variety of forms.

352. The following table exhibits the various forms which each personal pronoun assumes.

- | | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Af, of (or wyf), yf..from <i>fi</i> . | 1. Om, ym, cognate with
Gr ἡμεῖς. |
| 2. At, ot, yt, . . . from <i>ti</i> . | 2. Och, ych, . from <i>chwi</i> . |
| 3. { O, from <i>o=e</i> . | 3. Ynt, from <i>hwynt</i> . |
| { I, from <i>hi</i> . | |

353. These pronominals are classified under three distinct heads, distinguished by the termination of the first person singular. *Ataf* has *af* for its ending; *hebof* has *of*; *genyf* has *yf*: hence they belong to three different classes.

354. First class: Af.

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Sin. 1. Ataf (at-fi), to <i>me</i> . | Pl. 1. Atom (at-ἡμεῖς), to <i>us</i> . |
| 2. Atat (at-ti), to <i>thee</i> . | 2. Atoch (at-chwi), to <i>you</i> . |
| 3. { Ato (at-o), to <i>him</i> . | 3. Atynt ^a (at-hwynt), to |
| { Ati (at-hi), to <i>her</i> . | <i>them</i> . |

^a The letter *t* is sometimes cut off in poetry. 'Pan fo caledfyd arny'n.' *Ed. Prys*. 'Ni bydd byth son am dany'n.' *Id.*

The following belong to this class.

Arnaf (ar-fi), <i>upon me.</i>	Oddiarnaf, <i>from upon me.</i>
Darnaf (dar-fi), <i>upon me.</i>	Oddi am danaf, <i>from about me.</i>
Tanaf or danaf (tan-fi), <i>under me.</i>	Hyd arnaf, <i>even upon me.</i>
Am danaf, <i>about me.</i>	Hyd ataf, <i>up to me.</i>
O danaf, <i>under me.</i>	Parth ag ataf, <i>towards me.</i>
Oddi danaf, <i>from under me.</i>	

355. Second class: *Of.*

Sin. 1. Erof (er-fi), <i>for me.</i>	Pl. 1. Erom or erddom (er- hμais), <i>for us.</i>
2. Erot (er-ti), <i>for thee.</i>	2. Eroch or erddoch (er- chwi), <i>for you.</i>
3. { Erddo (er-o), <i>for him.</i> Erddi (er-hi), <i>for her.</i>	3. Erddynt (er-hwynt), <i>for them.</i>

The following belong to this class.

Hebof (heb-fi), <i>without me.</i>	Trwyof or drwyof (trwy-fi), <i>through me.</i>
Hanof or honof (han-fi), <i>of me.</i>	Hydos (hyd-fi), <i>over me.</i>
Rhagof (rhag-fi), <i>before me.</i>	Ynof (yu-fi), <i>in me.</i>
Rhyngof (rhwn-gi), <i>between me.</i>	O hanof, or o houof, <i>of or from me.</i>
Trosof or drosaf (tros-fi), <i>over or for me.</i>	Hyd ynof, <i>even to me.</i>
	Oddi rhyngof, <i>from between me.</i>

(a) *N* and *dd* (as in *arno*, *erddo*) are no parts of the original words, but are thrown in for the sake of euphony.

(b) *Trwyof* often omits the *y* in 1st and 2d persons.

Trosof has *t* in 3d person,—*trosto*, *trostynt*.

Hanof, *honof*, &c. have *dd* in no person,—*hono*, *honi*, *honom*, *honoeh*, *honynt*.

356. Third class: *Yf.*

1. Genyf (gan-fi), <i>with me.</i>	1. Genym (gan-hμais), <i>with us.</i>
2. Genyt (gan-ti), <i>with thee.</i>	2. Genych (gan-chwi), <i>with you.</i>
3. { Ganddo (gan-o), <i>with him.</i> Gauddi (gan-hi), <i>with her.</i>	3. Ganddynt (gan-hwynt), <i>with them.</i>

The following belong to this class.

Wrthyf (wrth-fi), *to me ; by me.*

Oddi wrthyf=*from beside me ; from me.*

Oddi genyf=*from with me ; from me.*

(a) *Wrthyf* and *odd wrthyf* have not *dd* in the 3d person, making *wrtho*, *wrthi*, *wrthynt*.

357. The preposition *i* with a personal pronoun is thus written.

Simple.

1. Imi (im'.)

1. Ini (in'.)

2. Iti (it'.)

2. Ichwi (iwch.)

3. { Iddo.
Iddi.

3. Iddynt.

Emphatic.

1. I mi.

1. I ni.

2. I ti.

2. I chwi.

3. { Iddo ef or fo.
Iddi hi.

3. Iddynt hwy.

INTERJECTIONS.

358. Many of the particles, denominated *interjections*, are 'verbs of the Imperative mood, both in their form and abstract meaning, and mostly of the second person.' *Aro!* stop, is the Imper. of *aros*, to stop: *wela*, or *wele!* behold, the Imper. of *gweled*, to see or behold: *taw!* hush, the Imper. of *teui*, to be silent.

359. Some are nouns and adjectives out of construction; as *ffwrdd*, avaunt: *huw!* alas; *syndod!* wonder; *dyn!* dear me; *dyn byw!* man alive; *druan!* poor thing; *druan bach!* poor little thing. Some are adverbs; as *dyma*; here is; *dacw!* yonder; *dyna!* there; *hwnt!* avaunt; *llyma!* lo here; *llyna!* lo there; *ymaith!* avaunt, away.

360. A phrase, or a clause with a portion left out, will frequently constitute an interjection; as *gwyn ei fyd!* would to heaven; *ysywaeth* (= which is worse) the more the pity.

361. Others are mere ejaculations which cannot be derived from any of the more substantial parts of speech.

Bw! *boh.*

Ffi or ffei! *fie.*

Dyt; *hold.*

Ha! *hah.*

Hai! <i>hey</i> .	Och! <i>alas</i> .
Hai wchw! }	Ow! <i>oh</i> .
Wchw! } <i>murder</i> .	Pw! }
Ho! <i>ho</i> .	Twt! } <i>pskaw</i> .
How! <i>alack</i> .	Wi! <i>hey</i> .
O! <i>oh</i> .	

PREFIXES AND AFFIXES.

PREFIXES.

362. Prefixes, or inseparable prepositions, generally^b add to or alter the meaning of the words, to which they are prefixed. *Rhedeg*, to run; *cylch-redeg*, to run *round*.

(a) A (=‘*a intensivum*’) augmentative or emphatic.

Athrist (trist) *very pensive*. Aban (ban) *an uproar*.

(b) A’=an; as a’ngbyfiawn.

Ach, enhancing. Achludd (ludd), *obstruction*. Achres (rhes), *a row*.

(a) AD, =re, iterative. Adnewyddu (newydd), *to renew*.

(b) AD in several words implies negation or contrariety; as

Adfudd (budd) *loss*. Adffurf (ffurf), *formless*. Adfiraïn (miraïn), *unseemly*.

Adfarch (march), *a gelding*. Adflas (blas), *ill-taste*. Adwïsg (gwisg), *disarray*.

“ Pob gwledd, er y sydd heddyw,

“ Wedi ei wledd adwoledd yw”=*starvation*.

(c) Ad takes also the form at; as attalu (talu); ateb (eb).

Add, enhancing. Addfed (med), *ripe*. Addfwyn (mwyn), *kind*.

It seems to be a modification of *ad* in addnaid (naid), *refuge*.

Af (probably a mutation of am=an), negative, privative, like *un* and *in*.

Afiach (iach), *unhealthy*. Afrwols (rheol), *irregular*.

Ail=ad. Ailfedyddio (bedyddio), *to rebaptize*. Ailbrynu (prynu), *to repurchase*.

AL enhances the meaning, like *great*, *high*, or *very*. (cf. *ly*.)

Alaeth (aeth), *lamentation*. Albrys (brys), *great haste*.

^b Generally, because some of the prefixes are sometimes redundant in point of *signification*,—serving merely to strengthen the *form* and afford a greater variety of *synonymous words*.

"It is often a prefix and affix in the names of places; as *Alban*, *Penal*, *Alchwyd*: and rivers; as *Alwen*, *Alun*, *Alaw*, *Alwy*."*

(a) *AM* (ἄμφι, *ambo*), round, about, like *am*, *peri*, *circum*. (cf. *um*. Ger.)

Amarfog (arfog), *armed on all sides*. *Amdori* (tori), *to amputate*.

(b) *Am* is a mutation of *an*; *ammharch* (parch), *disrespect*.

(c) *Am* is a contraction of *aml*; as

Amliw (lliw), *parti-coloured*. *Amryw* (rhyw), *sundry*.

(a) *AN* (ἀνευ, *in*, *un*), negative, privative, corresponding to *dis*, *mis*, *in*, *un*.

Annoeth (doeth), *unwise*. *Anallu* (gallu), *impotence*.

(b) *AN* in a few words has the force, and is probably a mutation of *en*; as

Anrhydedd (rhydedd), *honour*. *Anllad* (llawd), *wanton*.

Andaw (taw), *to listen*. *Anerch* (arch), *to greet*.

(a) *AR*, upon or over; high, great, very.

Argraff (craff), *inscription*. *Arfri* (bri), *high dignity*. *Argu* (cu), *very dear*.

(b) *AR* in a few words seems to correspond to 'præ'; as

Arfaeth (maeth), *predestination*. *Argoel* (coel), *an omen*.

(a) *AS*, parting, separating, like *es*. *Asgon* (con), *humble*.

(b) *AS* is often emphatic; as *asgwrn* (cwrn or corn); *Astell* (dell).

(a) *AT*, a mutation of *ad*, *q. v.*

(b) *AD* in a few words implies *to*; as *attodiad* (dodiad).

CY, *CYD*, *CYF*, *CYM*, *CYN*, *CYS*, (σύν, *con*), conjunctive, mutual.

Cynghor (côr) *a council*. *Cyd-redeg* (rhedeg), *to run together*.

Cyfwerth (gwerth), *of equal value*. *Cymmrawd* (brawd), *a fellow*.

Cynnal (dal), *to uphold*. *Cystal* (tal), *of equal value*.

CYD is generally changed into *cyt* before *t*; as *cyttras* (tras).

CYN is also cognate and synonymous with *cynt*; as *cynfai* (bai); *cynfab* (mab).

CYNT, first. *Cynt-hun* (hun), *first sleep*. *Cyntair* (gair), *an omen*.

DAD (dy-ad), repetition, like *re*; the undoing of an act, like *un* and *dis*.

Dadsain (sain), *an echo*. *Dadrodidi* (rhoddi), *to restore*.

Dadwigo (gwiago), *to undress*. *Dadarfogi* (arfogi), *to disarm*.

* *Dr. Pughe's Dictionary*, sub voce 'al.'

DAD becomes *dat* before *t*, and sometimes before other letters; as, *Dattro* (tro); *datddygu* (dysgu); *datguddiad* (cuddiad.)

DAM (dy-am)=*am*. *Dainredeg* (rhedeg), *to run about*.

(a) DAR (dy-ar)=*ar*. *Darbwyl* (pwyll), *persuasion*.
Darfoli (moli), *to celebrate*.

DAR, like *ar*, corresponds sometimes to '*præ*;' as *darparu* (par=paro); *darbod* (bod).

(b) DAR (di-ar) negative; diminutive.

Darfod (bod), *to cease to exist*. *Dargwsg* (cws), *a slumber*.

Darlögi (llosgi), *to singe*.

DAT=*dad*, *q. v.*

DED (dy-ed)=*ed*. *Dedfryd*⁴ (bryd), *a verdict*. *Dedwydd* (gŵydd), *happy*.

DI (=L. *de* in decolor, deformis, &c.) negative, privative, like *dis*, *in*, *un*, and the suffix *less*.

Diffodd (ffawdd=*φδω*), *to extinguish*. *Dios* (os), *doubtless*. *Dilwgr* (llwgr), *undefiled*.

The '*i*' is sometimes omitted before another vowel; as,

Daeth (di-aeth), the reverse of *aeth*, i. e. *he came*.

Del (di-el), *he will come*. *Daw* (di-aw=*au*), *he will come*.

Observ. *Di* has frequently the property of converting a substantive into an adjective; as *dawn*, a talent, *diddawn*, untalented.

DY, augmentative or intensive; iterative.

Dychryn (cryn), *terror*. *Dyrwyn* (rhwyn=*rhwym*), *to wind*.

DY is changed into *ty* in *tywyll* (gwyll), and *tywallt* (gwallaw).

The '*y*' is sometimes omitted before another vowel; as

Dethol (dy-ethol, L. *electus*); *dwyn* (dy-gwain); *deffraw* (dy-efraw).

So in the words *dyma*, *dyna*, *dacw*, *dobry*, *diso*, *ducho*.

(a) DIR (dy-ar or er), extreme, great; extremely, greatly.

Dirboen (poen), *extreme pain*. *Dirfawr* (mawr), *very large*.

(b) DIR is privative in *dirmyg* (myg), and *dirwest* (gwest). It is probably compounded of *di* and *ar* or *er*.

DIS (di-vs; cf. L. *dis* in dispar, dissimilis, &c.) negative, undoing of an act, like *un*, *dis*, &c.

Disgloff (cloff), *not lame*. *Disliw* (lliw), *colourless*.

DYS (dy-ys), intensive. *Dystaw* (taw), *silent*. *Dysgwyl* (gwyll), *to wait*.

DOS (dy-gos), intensive. *Dosbarthu* (parth), *to distribute*.

⁴ Some derive *dedfryd* from *dedd*, a law, and *bryd*, opinion: *dedfryd*=the opinion or sentence of the law.

DYM (dy-ym), reflexive; mutual.

Dymostwng (goetwng), to *humble one's self*. Dymgelu (celu), to *hide one's self*.

E, intensive. Edrych (drych=δέρρω), to *look*. Effraw (ffraw), *awake*.

It is doubtful whether e has not a negative force in some words; such as *ëofn* (ofn); *edw* (tw or twf); *ëang* (ang=εγγω).

ECH, emphatic. Echlur (llur), *livid*. Echdywynu (tywynu), to *glitter*.

In *echdoe*, and *echnos*, it seems to signify *priority*.

ED, iterative; intensive. Edliw (lliw), to *upbraid*. Edmyg (myg), *honour*.

EIL=ail. Eilar (âr), a *second ploughing*.

EN, emphatic. Enlawr (mawr), *very large*. Encil (cil), a *retreat*.

ER^e, impulsive, intensive; cause of.

Ermyg (myg), *honour*. Ergryd (eryd), *cause of trembling, dread*. In some few words it takes the form *erdd*; as *erddrym* (grym); *erddriong* (rhwng).

ES (=ex) parting, separating, like *ex*. Esgymuno= *excommunico*; estron=*extraneus*.

GO, partial, slight; partly, somewhat.

Gobaith (paith), *hope*. Gogleisio (clais), to *tickle*.

It has no particular meaning in the following words: *gofal* (mal=μέλει); *gogonedd* (conedd); *gollwng* (llwng=linquo); *golud* (llud=π-λοῦτος.)

Coming before *a*, it is sometimes changed into *gw*; as *gwarchadw*, for *goarchadw*; *gwarchau* for *goarchau*; *gwachul* for *goachul*. Dr. Davies.

It takes the form *ge* in *gellwng*; and its compound *gos* is written *ges* in *gestwng*, *gestyngiad*, &c.

GOR, over, above, superior, extreme, very.

Gorsedd (sedd=sedes), a *supreme seat*. Gorfawr (mawr), *very great*.

GWR=gor; as *gwrandaw* (andaw), to *listen*. Gwrfalch (balch), *very proud*.

GOS (go-ys)=go. Gosbwylllo (pwyll), to *decide partly*.

* "Juan, to go; Er-uan, to cause to go (Basque.) Ouini, light; Er-ouini, to cause light or to enlighten (Egyptian)." (*Johnes' Philological proofs*, &c.)

GWRTH, repulsive, contrary to, like *ante* and *contra*.

Gwrthddywedyd (dywedyd), *to contradict*. **Gwrthfarn** (barn), *a contrary judgment*.

HY (= *eu*), apt to, easy, worthy of, capable of, like the suffix '*able*.'

Hygof (cof), *memorable*. **Hyfaeth** (maeth), *easily nourished*. **Hybarch** (parch), *venerable*.

LLED, half, partly. **Lledgylch** (cylch), *a semicircle*.

RHAG (= *præ*), before, like *pre* and *fore*.

Rhagosod (gosod), *to set before*. **Rhagweled** (gweled), *to foresee*.

RHY, excessive, over. **Rhybarch** (parch), *extreme regard*.

TRA (= *trans*), beyond, over, like *trans* and *tra*.

Tragwyddol (gŵydd), *being beyond cognizance; eternal*. **Tramor** (mor), *transmarine*.

TRY (fr. *trwy*), through, thoroughly, like *per* and *dia*.

Tryfesur (mesur), *diameter*. **Tryfrith** (brith), *spotted all through*.

YM, reflexive; mutual.

Ymguddio (cuddio), *to hide one's self*. **Ymsenu** (senn), *to chide mutually*.

Ys interchanges with *es*, and *as*, *q. v.*

AFFIXES.

363. NOUN TERMINATIONS. Derivative nouns are formed from other simpler nouns, from adjectives or from verbs, by the addition of a termination.

From *nouns*; as *telynor*, from *telyn*; *cyfeillach*, from *cyfaill*.

From *adjectives*; as *callineb*, from *call*; *gwyllder* from *gwyl*.

From *verbs*; as *gwybodaeth*, from *gwybod*; *darllenydd*, from *darllen*.

364. Abstract. The following are generally terminations of abstract nouns, denoting the *state*, *quality*, or *property*

of the words, to which they are suffixed. [English equivalents: *ance, ence, head, hood, ness, tude, ty, &c.*]

DEB, purdeb.	ID, rhyddid.
DER, gwylder.	IONI, daioni.
DID, DYD { gwendid,	INEB, doethineb.
TID, TYD ^f { ieuenctid.	NI, tlyzni.
DOD, DAWD. Duwdod (cf. L. <i>tat</i> ; <i>civitate</i> .)	RWYDD, caredigrwydd.
EDD, mawredd.	WCH, tawelwch.
I, brynti.	YD, mebyd.
IANT } llwyddiant.	YDD, llawenydd. [Ydd denotes also a <i>person</i> or <i>agent</i> ; as <i>gweydd</i> .]
ANT } maddeuant.	
AINT } digofaint.	

(a) *Dub* and *dwr* are sometimes found for *deb* and *der*; as *dyndab*, *sychdwr*, *cryfdwr*.

365. *Agent*. The following denote a *person* or *agent*. [English equivalents: *er, ar, yer, ess, &c.*]

WR, IWR (rad. *gwr*), carwr, heliwr. Fem. WRAIG, golchwraig.

UR^s, ADUR, a *person*; as *floadur*: a *thing*; as *gwniadur*. Fem. URES, ADURES, golchuries, pechadures.

YDD, darllenydd, berwedydd. Fem. YDDDES gwasanaethyddes.

OR, AWR, telynor, doethawr. Fem. ORES, cantores.

AWDUR, AWDWR, llywiawdur, creawdwr. Fem. ODRS, ammherodres. [Cf. L. *tor, trix*; as *imperator, imperatrix*.]

YK^s is generally applied to *things*, but sometimes to *persons*; canwyllyr.

R often stands for *wr, ur, or yr*; as *ammherawdr, creawdr, llyfr*.

ON, gwyddon; byson.

ES (fem.) dynes, llewes. [Cf. L. *ix*, Eng. *ess*.]

AI, a *person*; as *gwestai*; a *thing*; as *awyr-bwysai*.

AD (IAD) denotes a *person*; as *ceidwad, offeiriad, lleiddiad, ceiniad*: a *verbal noun* (=ing); as *cadwad, lladdiad, caniad*.

(a) *Ad*, when a *verbal noun*, becomes plural by addition of *au*; as *caniadau*: when signifying a *person*, it becomes plural by being

^f *Tid* and *tyd* after the letter *c*: *ieuenctid, angenoetyd*.

^s Some wish to confine *wr, adur* to persons, and *yr, adyr*, to things.

changed into *aid*, or sometimes by the addition of *en*; as *offeiraid* or *offeiriadon*; *cariadon*.

366. **Promiscuous.** The following affixes are too promiscuous to be classified under distinct heads.

ACH in several words denotes *reproach*; as *corach*, *blythach*, *buach*, *celach*, *bwbach*, *gwrach*.

In other words it signifies *union*, *collection*, &c.; as *cyfeillach*, *cyfrinach*, *cyfeddach*, *ysbleddach*, *afallach*, *nodach*, *sitrach*.

HÂD and ÂD^b, verbal or abstract noun; as *cwblhâd*, *cyfiawnhâd*.

OD or AWD (a) an *act*; as *darllenawd*, *gyrawd*; (b) a *thing done*; as *esgusawd*. When suffixed to an instrument, it denotes a blow given with that instrument; as *ffonod*, *gwialenod*, *cleddyfod*, *arfod*, *gorddod*.

AR, ARN, an instrument; as *llyffethar*, *coesarn*, *canwyllarn*, *llwyarn*.

(a) *Arn* is probably a contraction of *harn* or *haiarn*, iron.

AEG, EG, language; as *Cymraeg*, *Cernyweg*.

EG signifies also *science* or *art*; as *rhesymeg*, *rheitheg*.

AETH, IAETH, state or quality; science, art, system, &c.; as *cadwedigaeth*; *llysieuath*, *ieithyddiaeth*, *didduwiaeth*. So *aniaeth*; as *gofaniaeth*, *gwlybaniaeth*.

AN, person, implement, &c.; as *mudan*, *liyman*; *cryman*, *cwran*.

EN (fem.) is added to plural nouns to form the singular, and also to sing. nouns and adjectives; *mesen*, *derwen*; *hogen*, *llomen*.

OG or AWG, one in possession of, having, full of, &c.; as *swyddog*, *marchog*, *plwyfog*, *ysgyfarnog*, *draenog*.

YN (mas.) is added to plural nouns, to form the sing. and to sing. nouns and adjectives; as *plentyyn*, *aderyn*; *cardotyyn*, *coegyyn*.

AN, EN, IG, OG, YN, diminutive terminations. *An* mas. or fem.; *en*, *ig*, and *og*, fem.; *yn*, mas.

Llyfran, maban (m.); trefan, bwyellan, (f.); pawan, (com.)

Corcen, pawen, pelen, pwten.

Ynysig, llancesig, oenig, orig.

Pwtog. Bachgenyn, dynyn.

^b Or *hüad*, *üad*.

AD, equivalent to *full* in *handful*; as *basgedaid*, *dyrnaid*, *llwyaid*, *mawaid*, *celyrnaid*.

AIN=EN. *Celain*, *bathain*, *putain*.

AS, union, conjunction, &c.; as *teyrnas*, *priodas*, *branas*, *perthynas*, *galanas*, *cymdeithas*.

ES=AS. *Llynges*, *llawes*, *buches*.

EU (or *au*), an agent; as *angu*, *clleddeu*.

EB (=ἔπος), expression or utterance; as *galareb*, *deiseb*, *gwrtheb*.

ED, what is done or suffered, &c.; adduned, *tynged*, *colled*, *niwed*, *dyled*, *caethiwed*.

EL, an implement, &c.; as *pwyntel*, *cogel*, *cantel*.

ELL, (fem.) an instrument or utensil; as *troell*, *cylllell*, *ysgrifell*, *bwyell*, *picell*, *yngrafell*. [*Tafell*=*tabula*.]

ELL is also diminutive; as *ysgubell*, *iyrchell*, *pihell*, *ffynnonell*, [cf. L. *ell*; *puella*.]

FA, a place; as *camfa*, *cigfa*, *chwareufa*, *porfa*.

FA is used also metaphorically. 'Cynnullleidfa' signifies, literally, *a place of assembly*, but, metaphorically, *those who assemble*. So also *ysfa*, *llosgfa*, *cnofa*, &c.

IN, an instrument; as *cribin*, *melin*, *megin*: a person (=yn); as, *dewin*, *brenin*.

L is sometimes suffixed to words without conveying any particular meaning; as *awdl* (=ᾠδή), *banadl*, *byddagl*, *chwibanogl*, *tymmestl*.

ONI, ONEG, ONIAETH, science or art; as *seroni*, *barddoni*, *barddoniaeth*.

W has no peculiar signification. *Tarw*, *twrw*, *agerw*.

(a) Dr. Pughe says, "The *w* has a very peculiar quality, as a termination of primitive nouns, of giving a negative or contrary meaning to them. Thus *hel*, a gathering, with *w* affixed, implies what is past gathering, or a possession: *ul* implies what is hurried, and with the affix *w* it implies what is divested of humidity, that is, cinders or ashes: and thus in all other instances¹." This, however, should be received with caution, as the etymology and the explanations assigned to almost all the words, adduced to illustrate this signification, are dubious and unsatisfactory.

YLL, (m.); as *brithyll*, *ysgutyll*, *curyll*, *cerfyll*. [*Camyll* = κάμυλος; *ffrewyll* = φραγγέλλιον; *gwyntyll* = ventulus.]

The following terminations occur but very seldom.

OL; as *trosol*, *craffol*.

¹ *Grammar*, p. 21.

RED; as gweithred, breithred.

WY; as brythwy, macwy, camwy, canwy, cynnhorthwy.

ING; as gwyning, rhudding, gweiling.

WG, (=wch); as tywyllwg, trythyllwg, asgyrnwg.

YF; as peryf, gwryf. [*Cleddyf*=gladium.]

IAR; as rhodiar, toniar, baniar.

367. ADJECTIVE TERMINATIONS.

ADWY, that may be, capable of (=able, ible); as credadwy, gwerthadwy.

AID, made of, covered with (=en or n); as euraid, arianaid.

AIDD (cf. Gr. *εἶδος*, a form,) like, resembling (=ish, ly, like); as plentynaid. When suffixed to adjectives it signifies *partly, somewhat* (=ish, some); as pruddaid.

AIN, full of, possessing (=ous, ful, y); as prydain, madiain.

AWR, or OR, full of; as goriawr.

AWG or OG, abounding with, full of, possessing; as brwynog, bywiog, arfog.

AWL or OL, relating to; of the nature of; having (=al); as dynol, gwrol, synwrol.

(a) Awg and awl are used mostly in poetry; og and ol in prose.

ED, FED, are the endings of the ordinal numbers (=th); as chweched, seithfed.

EDIG (cf. L. *amatus*, Eng. *loved*) strictly denotes the past passive participle; but the words, of which it forms a part, are generally used as adjectives (=ed, en, t.) Dysgedig, colledig, caredig.

FAWR (rad. *mawr*), great; as clodfawr, gwerthfawr.

GAR (rad. *car*), fond of, addicted to, having, or endued with; as gwingar, rhyfelgar, lliwgar.

IG, (cf. L. *icus*, *angelicus*) relating to a nation, &c. (=ish); full of, having; as Seisnig; gwenwynig, boneddig.

LLAWN, LAWN, full of; as digllawn, flyddlawn.

(a) Llawn and lawn are frequently written llon and lon; as digllon, flyddlon; but as llon signifies *cheerful*, the forms digllawn and flyddlawn are to be preferred.

IN (= Eng. *en*), consisting or made of; as *priddin*, *meiwin*.

LLYD, LYD, full of,—especially full of some disagreeable or unpleasant substance; as *gwenwynllyd*, *gwaedlyd*, *tarthlyd*.

US (cf. L. *osus*,—*vinosus*), full of; as *ofnus*, *rhyfygus*.

Two adjectival terminations are sometimes joined together, the latter modifying the signification of the preceding. In many instances, however, the latter is redundant.

Og aidd; as *taioгаidd*.

Us ol; as *iachusol*.

Lawn us; as *boddlonus*.

Us aidd; as *trefnusaidd*.

Aidd ol; as *sancteiddiol*.

In ol; as *gerwinol*.

Edig ol; as *caredigol*.

Fawr us; as *clodforus*.

TERMINATIONS OF VERBS have been arranged and exemplified under §§. 265, 273.

PART III.

SYNTAX.

THE ARTICLE.

368. The Welsh article has the forms *y*, *yr*, and *r*. The difference between *y* and *yr* is similar to that which exists between *a* and *an* in English; that is, *y* precedes a consonant; as *y dyn*; *yr*, a vowel and the aspirate *h*: as *yr awen*; *yr huf*.

369. When a word ending in a vowel precedes the article, the contracted form '*r*' is frequently used, whether the following word begins with a vowel or a consonant; as,

Yn awr yw'r amser. Y gwir a'r gau.

(a) This contraction is made for the sake of euphony and neatness, the phrase '*y gwir a'r gau*' being more euphonious and compact than '*y gwir ac y gau*.' But some writers, unwilling to indulge in too many contractions, use this form of the article, only when it is preceded by the words *a*, *i*, *o*, *na*, *no*, *mo*, *gyda*, and *ymg nghyda*; as *Y tad a'r fam*; *lladd a'r cleddyf*; *myned i'r dref*; *dyfod o'r wlad*; *gyda'r gwr*, &c.

370. The letter *w*, standing at the beginning of a word, is considered as having the nature of a consonant, if a vowel occurs in the same syllable. Hence this *w* is preceded by the form *y*; as,

Y waedd; *y weledigaeth*; *y wich*; *y wynfydedig forwyn*.

371. But when *w* is long (*ŵ*) and immediately followed by *y*, it is looked upon as a vowel, and preceded by the form '*yr*;' as *Yr ŵytnos*; *yr ŵyn*; *yr ŵyl*.

Observ. It makes no difference with regard to the properties of *w* whether the word begins in its radical state with *gw*; as *y wobr*, (rad. *gwobr*;) or simply with *w*; as *yr wytnos*.

372. The letter *i* will, in some cases, admit of being preceded either by *y* or *yr*. *Yr iaith* or *y iaith*. *Yr iwrch* or *y iwrch*.

373. As a general rule it may, perhaps, be said that *i*, when followed by a consonant, should be preceded by *yr*; as *yr irwellt*: that *i*, when followed by a vowel, may be preceded by *y* or *yr*, optionally; as *y iaith* or *yr iaith*.

374. If a noun or adjective of the masculine gender, sing. or pl., follows the article, it retains the *radical* initial; as,

Y brenin, *y breninoedd*; *y goruchaf Dduw*.

Exception. The numeral *dau*, though masculine, always takes the *middle* sound after the article; as *y ddau ddyn*.

375. If a noun or adjective of the *feminine* gender, and *singular* number, follows the article, its initial takes the *middle* sound; as

Y frenines (rad. *brenines*). *Y deilwng rian* (rad. *teilwng*).

376. *Ll* and *Rh*. A fem. noun sing. having *Ll* or *Rh* for its initial, retains the *radical* sound after the article; as *y llong*, *y rhwyf*, '*Y llinos wâr ar frig y llwyn*.' *D. S. Evans*.

But a fem. adjective sing. is usually softened, as above: *y lliog eneth* (rad. *lidiog*); *y rhywiog eneth* (rad. *rhywiog*).

377. *Observation.* It has been observed, under 'Etymology,' that the omission of the letter *g* is the sign of its middle sound. Now, if it happens that the initial letter of a word, after the omission of *g*, is a vowel, that word must be preceded by the form *yr*; as *yr eneth* (rad. *geneth*); *yr afr* (rad. *gafr*); *yr wrthddadl* (rad. *gwrthddadl*).

But if the initial letter, after the omission of *g*, is a consonant, the word should be preceded by the form *y*; as *y fan* (rad. *glan*); *y landeg ferch* (rad. *glandeg*); *y wefus* (rad. *gwefus*).

378. *Plural* feminines retain the *radical* sound; as

Y breninesau. *Y teilwng rianod*.

379. The article (as in English) must always precede the noun, or the noun and its concomitants, which it defines; as

Y dyn; *yr hen ddyn*; *y tra thrugarog Dduw*.

380. When two or more *definite* nouns come together, one depending on, or governed by the other, the *last* noun only will admit of the article, or its equivalent; as

Mab y brenin=*son of the king; the son of the king.*

Gwas mab y brenin, *the servant of the son of the king.*

Ty fy nhad=*house of my father; the house of my father.*

Cronglwyd ty fy nhad, *the roof of the house of my father.*

(a) A '*definite noun*' is a noun preceded by an article, either really or virtually.

381. When the former of two nouns is definite, and the latter indefinite, no article is used; as

Mab brenin=*son of king; the son of a king.*

Brenin gogoniant, *the king of glory.*

(a) When a demonstrative pron. belongs to the former of two substantives, the article is sometimes placed before the first, the demonstrative pron. coming after the second substantive; as *y brenin gogoniant hwn*=the king of glory this; this king of glory. This construction, however, is somewhat offensive to the Welshman's ear, and should, if possible, be avoided.

382. When neither of two nouns is definite, the construction is the same as above, or the preposition *i* will precede the latter; as

Mab brenin, *a son of a king.* Or, mab i frenin, *a son to a king.*

383. When the former of two nouns is indefinite, and the latter definite, the article and the preposition *i* will precede the latter; as

Mab i'r brenin, *a son to the king.*

384. When two nouns come together, the former having an article before it, the latter assumes the character of an adjective, and must be dealt with accordingly; that is, if preceded by a *masculine* noun, it retains its *radical* sound; if preceded by a *feminine* noun, it takes the *middle* sound; as

(m.) Y pen teulu. Y llyfr gweddi.

(f.) { Y ddinas wagedd (rad. gwagedd.) Yr awr weddi (r. gweddŷ.)
Pelydron clae'r seren ddydd.

385. When two nouns are connected by the preposition *o*, the article may precede both; as

Y rhan fwyaf o'r arian.

386. When two or more nouns come together, referring to the same person or thing, the article should be placed before the first only; as

Y pwnc neu fatter, the subject or matter.

Yr ysgrifenydd a thrysorydd, the secretary and treasurer.

387. But when two or more nouns come together, and refer to different persons or things, the article, or its equivalent, should be repeated before each; as

Y brenin neu'r frenines=the king or the queen.

Yr ysgrifenydd a'r trysorydd=the secretary and the treasurer.

Y gwr, y wraig a'r plant=the husband, the wife, and the children.

Yn dy ffydd, dy ofn a'th gariad=in thy faith, thy fear, and thy love.

388. Similarly, when adjectives precede a definite noun, it is far more elegant and expressive to repeat the article, or its equivalent, before each of them; as

Y caredig, yr hynaws a'r ffyddlawn gyfaill.

Fy ngharedig, fy hynaws a'm ffyddlawn gyfaill.

389. An adjective, preceded by an article, is in Welsh and English, equivalent to a noun; as

Y cyfiaw a ragora ar ei gymmydog.

390. The article, standing immediately before *hwn, neb, sawl*, &c. serves to form relative pronouns; as *yr hwn*=the this; who: *y neb*=the one, whoever.

391. When a noun is accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, an article, or its equivalent, will always be placed before the noun—the demonstrative occupying the last place; as

Y dyn hwn=the man this } *this man.*

Y dyn yma=the man here }

Fy mab hwn=my son this; this my son.

(a) In Greek the article is sometimes employed in the same manner; as

Ἀνατέστη ἐκ τῶν χυρῶν τούτων=dychwelodd o'r cyrau hyn.

ἡ γενεά αὐτῆς=y genedlaeth hon. Ὁ ἀνὴρ οὗτος=y gwr hwn.

392. Article before proper names. Names of persons have no article before them, except (a) When they require to be particularly referred to, in which case they are usually accompanied by an adjective; as *Yr Haman ddichellgar*, the crafty Haman; *y Moses hwn*, this Moses.

(b) When they are made plural: as *Y Gwyniaid o Lan Brân*, the Gwynnes of Glan Brân.

(a) The name "Jesus" is, however, usually written *yr Iesu* = δ' Ἰησοῦς, the Jesus.

393. Names of *rivers* have (as in English) the article generally placed before them; as

Yr Iorddonen, the Jordan; *Y Dafwys, the Thames*; *Y Ddyfrdwy, the Dec*.

394. Some names of *places* (countries, towns, &c.) are preceded by the article; others are not.

The following have an article before them. *Yr America*; *yr India*; *yr Aipht*; *yr Iwerddon*; *yr Abermaw*; *y Bala*, &c.

The following have no article before them. *Asia*; *Europa*; *Lloegr*; *Cymru*; *Efrainc*; *Llundain*; *Llangollen*; *Corwen*; *Dolgellau*; *Aberystwith*; *Llanymddyfri*, &c. [This class is by far more numerous than the preceding.]

NOUNS.

395. **Apposition.** When two nouns come together, relating to the same person or thing, the latter is said to be in apposition to the former.

396. The noun, that is set in apposition, retains the *radical* sound of its initial letter; as

Paul, *gwas Iesu Grist*. Môn, *mam Cymru*.

(a) If an article, or a possessive pronoun, intervene, the apposition word will, of course, be governed by it; as *Buddug y frenines*. *Arthur fy nhad*.

397. But when a common noun, immediately following a proper noun, has acquired the character of an epithet or title, its initial letter should be changed into the *middle* sound,—whether the noun, to which it is added, be *masculine* or *feminine*; as

Dafydd frenin, King David. *Idris Gawr*.
Ioan Fedyddiwr. *Mair Forwyn*.

398. *Observ.* In the phrase 'Paul, *gwas Iesu Grist*', *gwas* is distinct from the word *Paul*, and is separated from it by a comma; in the phrase '*Dafydd frenin*,' the two words coalesce into one notion, and cannot be separated by the intervention of a comma. In other words, *gwas* is placed *appositively*; *frenin* is placed *attributively*.

399. This *epithet*, or common noun, (e. g. *Dafydd frenin*) is virtually definite; and hence, if it be made to precede the proper noun, an article must go before it; as

Y brenin Dafydd=*the King David*. Y prydydd Rhys.

Y forwyn Fair. Y frenines Fuddug.

(a) If the proper noun be fem. it is commonly, but not necessarily, *softened*. Y forwyn Fair (rad. *Mair*).

400. The common noun may also be preceded by an article, even when it follows the proper noun; as *Dafydd y brenin*.

Thus 'King David' may be expressed in three different ways. 'Dafydd frenin;' 'y brenin Dafydd;' 'Dafydd y brenin.'

401. 'Yn apposition.' The particle *yn* is employed chiefly to set the predicate of a clause in apposition to the subject, or the latter of two accusatives in apposition to the former; as,

Dafydd sydd yn frenin, David is King.

A Duw a alwodd y goleuni yn ddydd, and God called *the light day*.

*. The use of *yn* will be more copiously discussed under "Apposition Verbs" and "Participles."

402. *Mal, fal, fel*, and *megys* are strictly *modal*, corresponding to the English '*as*.'

Efe, *megys* brenin, a barodd i'w holl ddeiliaid barchu y ddelw.

403. Appositions introduced by '*being*' are frequently translated into Welsh by a *cause clause*, or a *relative*; as

'Arthur, being a good poet.' Arthur, *yr hwn sydd yn brydydd da*; or, Arthur, *gan ei fod yn brydydd da*.

404. Or thus: *a* or *ac*,—*a pers. pron.*—*yn apposition*,—*apposition word*; as

Pa ham y mae efe ac ereill, *a hwythau yn Iuddewon*, yn credu? Pwy, *ac efe yn ddiniwed*, a gollwyd? *Job iv. 7.*

405. Two nouns are set in apposition by means of the prep. *o (of)*, when the one describes the *character, occupation, &c.* of the other, and when one of them may be converted into an adjective, (or, in fact, frequently omitted.)

Gwr o brophwyd=gwr prophwydol=prophwyd, *a prophet*.

Llancesau o wryrfon=llancesau gwryrfol=gwryrfon, *virgins*.

Benyw o olchyddes, or golchyddes o fenyw=golchyddes, *a washer-woman*.

(a) A similar idiom occurs in English. "Such expressions as *a rogue of a lawyer, a rascal of an attorney, &c.* are equivalent to a *roguish lawyer, a rascally attorney* ^b."

So also in Greek: σὺν μέγα χρῆμα, a huge monster of a boar, (Herodotus i. 36.) τοῦ χιμῶνος χρῆμα ἀφόρητον.

406. Appositions are sometimes made by placing *gan* before the apposition-word, if a *noun*; *genyf*, &c. if a *pronoun*: as

Y milwr *gan* ' Arthur.

Y sant *gan* Bedr.

Y lleidr *genyf* ti.

Y diogyn *ganddo* ef.

407. **Nominative case.** The most natural position of the nominative case is after the verb, which owing to its being the 'principal word,' stands at the beginning of the sentence; as

A dygodd *y ddaiar* egin. A bendithiodd *Duw* hwynt.

408. But when the nominative is the emphatic term, and frequently even in simple narration, it is made to precede the verb, in accordance with its position in the English language.

Arthur sydd yn myned yno.

A'r *Arghwydd Dduw* a luniasai y dyn.

409. When the nominative occupies the first place in the clause, or immediately follows its verb, it retains the *radical* form; but when it follows the verb, and is separated from it by an adverb, or a phrase, its initial letter is changed into the *middle* sound; as,

Dynion dewr a ddaethant yno. }

Daeth *dynion* dewr yno. }

Daeth yno *ddynion* dewr.

∴ The syntax of the nom. case will be enlarged upon under the 'Verbs.'

410. **Possessive (or Genitive) case.** When two nouns of

^b *Arnold's Eng. Grammar.*

ⁱ Probably *gan* here signifies 'with.' If so, *Y milwr gan Arthur* will be translated by 'the soldier with Arthur;' that is, *dwelling with or in the person of Arthur.*

different relation come together, one of them is said to be in the *possessive* (or *genitive*) case.

411. In Welsh, the genitive relation is expressed (*a*) by mere apposition, (*b*) by the preposition *o* (of).

412. The genitive expressed by *mere apposition* retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as,

Coron *brenin*. Olwynion *cerbyd*. Heol *Babylon*.

(*a*) But if any other word intervene between the two nouns, the genitive will, of course, be governed by it.

Ty *y frenines*. Ty *fy nhau*.

(*b*) After *teyrnas*, *templ*, *ty*, *eglwys*, &c. the word *Ddu* generally, but not necessarily, takes the middle sound. (*Eglwys Dduw*; *ty Dduw*.) So also do the words *Dewi* and *Dafydd*. (*Esgob ty Ddewi*.)

413. In the following circumstances the genitive is expressed by *mere apposition*.

a) When we express 'the relation of the possessor to the thing possessed;' as

Ty *brenin*. Llyfr *Dafydd*. Mantell *Angharad*.

b) When we express 'the relation of an agent to an action or effect;' as

Gwaith *Du*. Nyth *aderyn*. Templ *Solomon*.

c) When we express 'the mutual relation of persons;' as

Tad *y bachgen*. Mam *fy nhad*. Gwas *ei frawd*.

d) When we express 'the relation of a whole to its parts;' as

Olwynion *cerbyd*. Hwyl *llong*. To *ty*.

414. In the following circumstances the genitive is preceded by the proposition *o*^k (of).

a) When the genitive describes the quality or property of an object; as

Dyn *o ddysg*, *a man of (=with, having) learning*.
Gwr *o ddoniau mawr*.

(*a*) This genitive is often equivalent to an adjective. *Dyn o ddysg*=*dyn dysgedig*=*a learned man*.

b) When it expresses the material or substance, of which a thing is made; as

Ty *o goed*, *a house of (=made of) wood*. Gwialen *o haiarn*.

^k The word *ar* is occasionally met with instead of *o*; as "math *ar* liw glâs ydyw."

(a) This genitive is also expressed without *o*, in which case it is used adjectively. (See below, §. 416.)

c) When it expresses the *place*, &c. from which a person comes; as

Gwr o Athen, a man of (=from) Athens.

d) The preposition *o* follows words expressive of number and quantity; such as *lliaws*, *bagad*, *torf*, *rhan*, *cyfran*, *darn*, *swm*, *digon*, *gormod*, *talp*; such pronouns and substantive words as *pwyl*, *neb*, *llawer*, *amryw* and *amrai*, *rhai*, *ychedig*: numeral¹ and superlative adjectives; as *pump*, *deg*, *goreu*, *harddaf*.

Lliaws o ddynion.

Torf o filwyr.

Rhan o'r tir.

Pwyl o honoch?

Llawer o ddwfr.

Ugain o wyr.

Y goreu o'r cwbl.

Y flwyddyn olaf o'i deyrnasiad.

415. *Observation.* Nouns and pronouns, denoting number and quantity (except such words as *pwyl* and *neb*), and the numeral adjectives usually employed in speaking of number indefinitely, frequently change position with the genitive; and in this case their initial consonants should assume the *middle* sound; as

Rhyfeddodau lawer. Adar fyrdd.

Dwfr ddigon. Gwyr fegad.

416. The *mere apposition* genitive is often equivalent to an adjective, and is dealt with accordingly; that is, if the preceding noun be *masculine*, the genitive retains the *radical*; but if it be *feminine*, and of the *singular* number, the genitive takes the *middle* sound. This adjectival character especially belongs to it when it expresses *age*, *price*, or the *material*, out of which something is made.

Age.	{	Gwr can mlwydd.	Bachgen dwyflwydd.
		Gwraig gan mlwydd.	Geneth ddwyflwydd.
Price.	{	Ceffyl punt.	Llyfr ceinog.
		Torth ddwy geiniog.	Cauwyll ddimai.
Material.	{	Ty coed.	Ceffyl pren.
		Sarph bres.	Rhaff dair cainc.

(r) With this idiom compare the English, 'a *gold* ring,' 'a *stone*-mason.'

417. The *infinitive* mood of verbs often stands as a noun in the genitive case; as

¹ Numeral adjectives are used with or without *o*: *ugain o wyr*, or *ugain gwr*. (See §. 457.)

'Ym mhryd *machludo haul*,' at the time of the going down of the sun.

'Amser *haw*,' the time of sowing. 'Amser *medi*,' the time of reaping.

418. When two nouns are so connected as to form a compound, the one that is in the genitive relation is put first, and governs the other in the *middle* sound. *Brenindy* = *ty brenin*. (See §. 36.)

419. **Accusative** (or **objective**) case. The place, which the accusative case most naturally occupies, is after the verb and the nominative.

Teifi y bachgen gareg. A'r dyfroedd a foddant y lloches.

420. But when it requires to be marked with emphasis, it may occupy the first place; as

Gwialen dy nerth a enfyn yr Arglwydd o Sion.

421. When the accusative begins the sentence, or when it immediately follows an indefinite verb, it retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as

*Gwialen dy nerth a enfyn yr Arglwydd.
Ymae efe yn moliannu Duw.*

422. But when it comes after a finite verb, or after an infinitive separated from it by an adverb or a phrase, its initial consonant should be changed into the *middle*; as

*Y bachgen a deifl gareg.
Tynu ymaith bechodau.*

423. Prepositions govern different sounds (see §§. 338—349.) Hence, an accusative after a preposition must have its initial consonant placed in that sound which the preceding particle governs. For example;

Mewn and *rhwng* govern the *radical*. 'Mewn *ty*,' in a house. 'Rhwnng *mynyddoedd*,' between mountains.

Tros and *heb* govern the *middle*. 'Tros *for*,' over sea. 'Heb *Dduw*, heb *ddim*,' without God, without any thing.

424. The accusative is sometimes put absolutely at the beginning of the clause, a corresponding personal pronoun following the verb. This is done when particular attention is called.

*A hefyd fy ngelynion hyny, dygwch hwynt yma.
Y duwiau, ni wnaethant y nefoedd, difethir hwynt.*

* * The syntax of the accus. in connection with the verb will be again referred to under the "*Verbs*."

425. An accusative is also put absolutely after adjectives; as, *benyw deg ei phryd*=*a female fair (as to) her countenance*. (See Syntax of "Adjectives.")

426. Nouns denoting *duration* and *point of time*, *distance of place*, and *measure*, are put absolutely, as in English. If such nouns stand foremost in the sentence, they usually retain their *radical* form; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonant should be changed into the *middle*; as

Deng wythnos yr arosais yno, } *I stayed there ten weeks.*
Arosais yno ddeng wythnos, }

Lfiw nos y daethym, } *I came by night.*
Daethym fiw nos, }

Pymtheg cufydd yr ymgryfhäodd y dyfroedd, } '*fifteen cubits up-*
Ymgryfhäodd y dyfroedd bymtheg cufydd, } '*ward did the waters*
prevail.'

427. **Vocative case.** The vocative case is preceded by an interjection, expressed or understood; and, as all interjections govern the *middle* sound, the initial of the vocative will accordingly be *softened*.

O Dad trugarog! O drugarog Dad!
Dad trugarog! Drugarog Dad!

428. When the interjection is omitted, the vocative sometimes retains its *radical* form; as

Duw Dad, o'r nef, trugarha wrthym.

Occasionally the article, with or without an interjection, precedes the vocative; as

'*O y Galatiad ynfyd!*'
 '*Yr ogoned, lan, fendigaid Drindod.*'

ADJECTIVES.

429. **Agreement.** The agreement of adjectives with their nouns, in gender and number, is partial.

430. **Gender.** Those which agree in gender by vowel inflections, are certain primitive adjectives, of which a list is given in §. 137.

Ceffyl gwyn.
Tlws fachgen.

Casg wen.
Tlws eneth.

431. When adjectives begin with one of the mutable consonants, and follow their nouns, their gender is also indicated by their initial consonant; as

Ceffyl cryf.

Caseg gref.

Gwr duwiol.

Gwraig dduwiol.

(a) If the noun is *plural*, the adjective undergoes no change whatever; as

Cesyg gwynion. Gwragedd duwiol.

432. When adjectives have no vowel-inflections, and do not begin with any of the mutable consonants, they are said to be of *common gender*; as

Gwr hardd.

Gwraig hardd.

*. See 'Government of Adjectives.'

433. *Number.* Those which agree in number are mostly primitive adjectives: sometimes compounds and derivatives.

Gwr doeth.

Gwyr doethion.

Gwr annoeth.

Gwyr annoethion.

Y caredig frawd.

Y caredigion frodyr.

(a) *Dr. Pughe*, treating of the primitive adjectives, says; "The primitive adjectives may or may not agree in number with their substantives, optionally, as the euphony may require." And again of the derivatives, "The adjectives of this class seldom take the plural form, except in poetical language, when they are made to agree with plural nouns with happy effect." But it should be observed that a very large number of adjectives are *never* made plural; and as none of the common adjectives necessarily require a plural number, it would be more convenient to employ the *singular* form of all such even when the noun is *plural*. (*Gwyr doeth*.)

(b) Adjectives should be in the plural form when they stand as plural nouns; as

'Y nefolion,' the heavenly ones. 'Y caredigion,' the beloved ones.

434. *Position.* The place which a common adjective in the positive state occupies in a sentence, conventionally arranged, is usually *after* the noun which it modifies; as

Gwr cyfiawn. Merch landeg.

435. But in poetical language and rhetorical prose, the adjective is very often made to *precede* the noun; as

"Hyfryd liwian'r bryniau a'r bronydd,

Gerddi a gweunydd gyll eu gwawr;

Prudd ddystawrwydd sy'n gyffredin,

Heb ddim lleisiau ar y llawr." *D. Davis.*

(a) An adjective, joined to a noun to form a compound, takes the precedence. *Mawr/fryd*=mawr-bryd. (§. 62.)

436. Indefinite pronouns (except *arall* and *oll*), and numerals (except *cyniaf*), always precede their substantives. (§§. 188, 457, 462.)

437. "Adjectives in a state of comparison are so adapted that they may be optionally made to precede or to follow the nouns".

Cyn hardded gwr. Harddach gwr.
Yr harddaf wr.

438. Several adjectives may come together, either preceding or following the noun to which they belong; or one may precede and another follow it, according to the writer's taste.

Fy anwyl, gariadus frodyr.
Fy mrodyr anwyl a chariadus.
Fy anwyl frodyr cariadus.

439. Government. When a common adjective in the positive state precedes, the noun (whether sing. or pl., mas. or fem.) has its initial consonant changed into the *middle* sound; as

Duwiol bendefig. Glan rianod.

440. But if an adjective of the equal or comparative degree precede, the noun retains its *radical* form; as

Cyn fwyned gwr. Cyn fwyned gwraig.
Mwynach gwyr. Mwynach gwraig.

(a) Should an article precede the comparative, the following noun may be *softened*.

'Ond darfu'r tlysach ferched llon.' *D. S. Evans.*

441. Adjectives of the superlative degree^a govern the *middle* sound; as

Y mwynaf gyfaill. Y fwynaf fechr.
Ein grasusaf frenines.

442. When the adjective follows a *masculine* noun, it

^a *Dr. Pughe's Grammar*, p. 59.

^a The superlatives *mwyaif* and *lleiaf* are adverbs as well as adjectives: when adverbs, they govern the radical sound. (Arthur yw y *mwyaif* dysgedig. Y ffordd *fwyaif* cyffredin o'u cadw yn awr ydyw drwy y dawns. *Brutus*.)

retains the *radical*: when it follows a *feminine* noun, *singular*, it is changed into the *middle* sound; as

Dyn *da*.
Merch *ddoeth*.

Ty *teg*.
Gwraig *daclus*.

443. When the adjective follows a *plural* noun, *masculine* or *feminine*, it retains the *radical* form; as

Milwyr *gwrol*.
Gwragedd *dawiol*.

Dynion *da*.
Picellau *tanllyd*.

444. When an adjective follows a proper noun of either gender, as an epithet or agnomen, its initial consonant should be put in the *middle* sound; as

Hywel *dda*.
Elen *brydferth*.

Alecsander *fawr*.
Lazarus *dlawd*.

(a) The *position* of adjectives of this character is the same in English. (*Alexander the great. Cato the wise.*)

445. **Accusative after adjectives.** Sometimes an adjective is followed by a noun in the accusative, expressing the thing to which the notion of the adjective belongs. In other words, the adjective is made to agree with the object spoken of, rather than with the noun which describes the quality of that object; as

Gwr *hardd yr olwg* = a man beautiful the appearance.
Gwraig *lan ei chalon*. Dyn *trwm ei glyw*.
Seithwyr *da eu gair*. A'r adar *llaes eu hesgyll*.

(a) With the above compare the Greek idiom.

Πόδας ὀκὺς Ἀχιλλεύς = Achilles swift (as to) feet.
Καλὸς τὴν ψυχὴν = beautiful (as to) soul.

446. Occasionally the preposition 'o' intervenes between the adjective and the accusative; as Gwr *teg o bryd* = a man fair of countenance.

447. Moreover, the adjective is by modern writers frequently made to agree with the quality of the object described, in accordance with the English idiom; as Gwr *o olwg hyfryd*, a man of a pleasant look.

448. **Comparison.** The *equal* degree is expressed (1) Simply by the form ending with '*ed*.' (2) By the same

* In (e. g.) "gwr hardd yr olwg" the adj. *hardd* agrees with the word *gwr*, rather than with *golwg*, which describes its quality. Here the Welsh and English are at variance; for in the latter the adj. is made to agree with the describing noun, and not with the noun described. (A man of a beautiful appearance.)

form, preceded by other particles. (3) By the positive state, preceded by *mor*. This comparison denotes sometimes *admiration* or *vague comparison*; and sometimes *equality*.

449. It will be expressed in English by the adverbs *how*, *so*, or *as*, with an adjective in the positive state.

"*How*." *Wyned yw'r eira! Cyn wyned yw'r eira! Mor wyn yw'r eira!*

"*So*." *Cued ganddo ei bleser, fel na ddaw. Y mae cyn ddoethed, fel y gwyr y cwbl. Y mae mor ddoeth, fel y gwyr y cwbl.*

"*As*." *Dos ymaith gynted ag y gelli. Dos ymaith cyn cynted ag y gelli. Dos ymaith mor fuan ag y gelli.*

450. In general, however, the form which corresponds to *how*, marking admiration, is that which ends in *ed*, either alone or preceded by an interjection:

Duw anwyl, fyred einioes! O fyred yw'r einioes!
Och! berycled yw'r daith.

451. *Cyn* (*can* or *gan*) with the '*ed* form,' and *mor* with the positive state, are used when we express the notion implied in *so* and *as*, and in *how* when it heads a subjoined clause.

Rhedodd cyn gyflymed, fel P na allodd ei ddal.
Y mae Arthur cyn hardded a P Dafydd.
A welwch chwi mor wyn yw'r eira?

(a) *Cyn* (*can* or *gan*) and *mor* govern the *middle sound*.

452. When two objects are spoken of, the comparative is used in English; as 'He is the elder of the two.' In this case the Welsh employ the superlative; as 'Efe yw'r *hynaf* o'r ddau'=he is the *eldest* of the two. 'Efe yw'r *goreu* o'r ddau'=he is the *best* of the two.

453. In English "proportionate equality is marked by *the—the* with comparatives. '*The more* you study, *the more* you will learn'." In Welsh this is expressed by two superlatives, the particle *po*' (=L. *quo*) preceding the former; as

P Observe the corresponding particles: *cyn . . . fel*, *so . . . that*; *cyn . . . a* or *ag*, *as . . . as*.

¹ *Arnold's English Grammar.*

² Colloquially *puwy*.

Po mwyaf yr edrychaf arno, sicraf wyf o hono=*by so much the most* I look at him, the most certain I am of him; the more I look at him, the more certain I am of him.

(a) The words *yn y byd* (in the world) *oll* or *i gyd* (all), are often placed after the latter superlative, to strengthen the assertion. '*Po mwyaf y carwn Grist, mwyaf oll y myfyriwn ar Ei gariad.*' *Nicander.*

(b) The two clauses are frequently inverted,—especially when there is an ellipsis of one or of the two verbs; as '*Goreu po cyntaf*'=*best by so much the soonest; the sooner the better.* '*Goreu po cyntaf y daw,*' *the sooner the better he comes.*

454. Comparison is also expressed by *go*, partly; *lled*, partly; *tra*, very; *pur*, very; *rhy*, too; *gyda*, with.

'*Gwr tra dysgedig,*' *a very learned man.*

'*Gyda'r goreu o honynt,*' *(equal) with the best of them.*

NUMERALS.

455. **Cardinal Numbers.** Cardinals have no distinction of gender, except *dau*, *tri*, and *pedwar*, which have *dwy*, *tair*, and *pedair* for the feminine.

Dau ddyn.

Dwy ddynes.

Pum' dyn.

Pum' dynes.

456. They have no plural number, except when (as in English) they are used substantively. *Degau*, tens; *ugeiniau*, scores; *cannoedd*, hundreds.

'*Y mae yn ei lyfrgell ugeiniau o lyfrau.*'

457. Cardinals *precede* their nouns, which may follow either immediately or with the intervention of the preposition '*o*.' If the nouns follow immediately, the rule is that the cardinals should be in the *singular* number; if with the intervention of '*o*,' they must be in the *plural*; as

Tri dyn=three man; three individual men.

Tri o ddynion=three of men, from the general class.

(a) Sometimes, however, the nouns are put in the plural, even when they immediately follow the numerals. Thus

Seithwyr da eu gair. *Y deuddeg apostolion.*

Y tri wyr hyn. *Pedwar gwyr* rhyddion.

(b) *Mil*, a thousand, and its compounds, are always followed by the preposition; as '*Mil o wyr.*' '*Dwy fil o wyr.*'

458. Cardinals are, in general, followed by the *radical* sound; as *Pedwar gwr*. *Pum' gwraig*.

459. But to this rule there are several exceptions.

a) *Un*, masculine, governs the *radical*; *un*, fem., governs the *middle*.

Un dyn; *un dyn ar ddeg*. *Un ddynes*; *un ddynes ar ddeg*.

Un, fem. before *ll* and *rh* generally governs the *radical*.

Un llaw; *un rhaw*.

b) *Dau*, mas., and *dwyr*, fem., govern the *middle*. *Dau ddyn*; *dau ddyn ar bymtheg*. *Dwyr ddynes*; *dwyr ddynes ar bymtheg*.

c) *Tri* and *chwe'* govern the *aspirate* of the *first* class; and *radical* of the *second* and *third*. *Tri char*; *tri phen*; *tri tharw*; *chwe' char*. *Tri gwr*, *tri bys*, &c.

d) The words *blynedd*, *blwydd* (a year), and *diwrnod* (a day), often take the *nasal* sound after several of the numerals. *Pum mlynedd*; *saith mlwydd*; *wyth niwrnod*. But a great irregularity of usage prevails in this; and hence it would be better to retain the *radical* sound of these words rather than change them into the nasal when they are preceded by such numerals. (*Pum blynedd*; *saith blwydd*; *wyth diwrnod*.)

(a) The mutations made when numerals are put in composition with nouns are likewise irregular; as *pumnyn*=*pum dyn*; *pumwr*=*pum gwr*; *canmuwch*=*can buwch*.

460. A singular noun preceded by a numeral is equivalent to a plural, and is followed by a plural verb; as

Y ddau ddyn a atebasant.

(a) When a numeral is followed by a substantive and an adjective, the adjective will be singular; as

Dau ddyn du. *Tri gwr ieuanc*.

(b) The demonstrative *hwn*, *hwno*, &c. are put in the plural; as

Y tair gwaith hyn. *Y ddau filwr hyny*.

(c) The adj. pronoun *arall* is sometimes put in the sing., and sometimes in the plural; as

Y ddau ddyn arall. *Y saith niwrnod ereill*.

461. Ordinal Numbers. Ordinals have no distinction of gender, except *trydydd* and *pedwerydd*, which have *trydedd* and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

Y trydydd dydd.

Y drydedd awr.

Y pedwerydd boreu.

Y bedwaredd bennod.

Y pumed mab.

Y bummed ferch.

462. Ordinals *precede* their nouns; and the nouns, if *masculine*, retain the *radical*; if *feminine*, they are changed into the *middle* sound; as

Y pummed dydd. Y bummed bennod (rad. pennod).

(a) But *cyntaf* is usually put *after* its noun; as Y dyn *cyntaf*.

(b) *Ail* is followed by the *middle* sound, even when the noun is *masculine**, as Yr ail *ddyn*; yr ail *bwne*.

PRONOUNS.

(1.) PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

463. The different forms and modifications of personal pronouns depend, to a certain extent, upon the position assigned to them in construction.

464. They are to be considered in their connection with *verbs*, *nouns*, and *prepositions*.

465. **Connected with verbs.** "The personal pronouns may be used or omitted with the verbs, either preceding or following them, in all their inflections. They are more particularly used when an emphasis is required on the pronoun 'I'."

Simple. Gwelais y dyn.

Emphatic. Gwelais i y dyn.

466. When the nominative or accusative occupies the first place in the sentence, it retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as 'Ti a ddywedaist hyn.' But if some governing word precedes, it affects the initial of the pronoun; as 'A thi, a ddywedaist hyn.'

467. *First pers. singular.* When the nominative case comes after the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the verb ends in *f*, *r*, or *d*; as caraf *fi*; cerir *fi*; cerid *fi*. It takes *i* or *innau*, if the verb ends in *n*, *m*, or *s*; as adwaen *i*; carwn *innau*; bum *i*; cerais *innau*.

468. When the pronoun is in the accusative, *following* the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the nominative case follows the verb; as Carodd Arthur *fi* or *finnau*; carodd (ef) *fi* or *finnau*.

(a) The word "*following*" refers to *order of construction*, not to *government*.

469.  But when a possessive pronoun precedes the

* Sometimes the *radical* comes after it. Yr ail dydd. *Bible*. Yr ail cyfammod. *Edw. Samuel*. Yn ail peth. *M. Kyffin*.

¹ *Dr. Pughe's Grammar*, p. 65.

verb, the nominative and the accusative take the form *i* or *innau*. *Fe'm cerir i* or *innau*; *pan y'm cerir i*; *dywed fy mod i* or *innau yno*; *Arthur a'm carodd i* or *innau*.

470. The pl. *ni* and *ninnau* will take any position. *Ni* or *ninnau* a ddaethom; *daethom ni* or *ninnau*; *carasant hwy ni* or *ninnau*.

471. *Second person sing.* When the nominative comes after the verb, the second person takes *di* or *dithau*, if the verb ends in *r*, *d*, or in a vowel, or if it is in the Imper. mood; as *cerir di*; *carasid di*; *ceri di*; *canlyn di*. It takes *ti* or *tithau*, if the verb ends in *t*; as *ceraist ti*; *carasit tithau*.

472. When the pronoun is in the accusative, *following* the verb, it takes *di* or *dithau*. *Carodd Arthur di*; *carodd (ef) dithau*.

473. When a possessive pronoun precedes the verb, the nominative and the accusative take *di* or *dithau*, independently of the preceding letter. *Fe'th gerir di* or *dithau*; *pan y'th gerir di*; *dywed dy fod di* or *dithau yno*; *Arthur a'th garodd di* or *dithau*.

474. The pl. *chwi* and *chwithau* will take any position, like *ni* and *ninnau*.

475. *Third pers. singular.* When the nominative or the accusative precedes the verb, the forms usually employed are *efe* and *efo*, for the masculine. *Efe* or *efo* a ddaeth; *efe* or *efo* a garaf fi.

476. *E*, *ef*, *o*, and also *efe*, are employed when the nominative follows the verb. *Dyweddodd e*, *ef*, *o*, or *efe*.

477. When the pronoun is in the accusative, *following* the verb, the forms *e*, *ef*, or *o*, are used. *Cerais e*, *ef*, or *o*; *Arthur a'i carodd e*, *ef*, or *o*.

478. The fem. *hi* and *hithau*; the mas. *yntau*; and the pl. *hwythau* and *hwyntau* will take any position, like *ni* and *ninnau*.

479. *Hwy* and *hwynt*. *Hwynt* is for the most part an accusative *following* an active verb; or a nominative *following* a passive verb. *Caraf hwynt*; *cerir hwynt*. [But *Hwy* is preferred to *hwynt* after *nt*; as 'carant *hwy*,' not 'carant *hwynt*.'] *Hwy* may be used in all cases. *Hwy* a garant; *carant hwy*; *Arthur a'u car hwy*^a.

^a *Hwy* is given in Gambold's Grammar, p. 34. as the pl. of the 3d pers. fem. (*hi*) only. He ought to have given it as the pl. of the 3d pers. mas. (*ef*) as well.

480. The 'emphatic' forms of all persons and numbers (except *efe*, see above), and the 'emphatic and conjunctive,' generally precede their verbs. *Myfi* or *myfinnau* a erfyniaf: *tydi* or *tydithau* a ddeui, *nyni* a atolygwn i ti.

(a) Such expressions as "pa ham y derbyniodd gliniau *fyfi*;" "canlyn di *fyfi*," where the emphatic form is in the accusative, following the verb, are not often met with.

(b) But if the emphatic form be connected by a conjunction to a simpler form of the pronoun, or to a noun, it may follow the verb. Aethym i a *thydi* yno; aeth *Arthur* a *myfi* yno.

481. Auxiliary pronouns. *Fe*, *fo*, and *e* are employed as auxiliary pronouns in affirmative propositions. They are placed before verbs when followed by their nominative case, or when apparently they have no nominative.

Fe dybir *hyn* gan lawer.

Ond *fo*'m lluddiwyd i.

Fe weryd *ef* y cyfion.

E ddaw fy *mrawd* yma.

(a) *Fe*, *fo*, and *e* are followed by the middle sound.

482. *Hi*. *Hi* corresponds to *it*, standing as the nominative case to a verb, descriptive of the *weather*, *circumstances*, &c.

Y mae hi yn gwlawio, *it is raining*.

Y mae hi yn galed arno, *it is hard upon him*.

483. Connected with nouns. When the possessive pronoun is to be marked with a degree of emphasis, a corresponding personal pronoun is put after the noun. The forms, which they assume when thus employed, will be seen in the following examples.

1. *Fy* nhad *i* or *innau*.

2. *Dy* dad *di* or *dithau*.

3. { *Ei* dad *ef*, *e*, *o*, or *yntau*.

{ *Ei* thad *hi* or *hithau*.

1. *Ein* tad *ni* or *ninnau*.

2. *Eich* *chwi* or *chwithau*.

3. *Eu* tad *hwy*, *hwynt*, or *hwythau*.

484. Connected with prepositions. The pronouns take the same forms after 'compound prepositions ending with a substantive', as those which they take after nouns.

1. *O*'m blaen *i*, or *innau*.

2. *O*'th flaen *di*, or *dithau*.

3. { *O*'i flaen *ef*, *e*, *o*, or *yntau*.

{ *O*'i blaen *hi*, or *hithau*.

1. *O*'n blaen *ni*, or *ninnau*.

2. *O*'ch blaen *chwi*, or *chwithau*.

3. *O*'u blaen *hwy*, *hwynt*, or *hwythau*.

485. After *pronominal prepositions** they assume the following forms.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Ataf <i>fi</i> , or <i>finnan</i> . | 1. Atom <i>ni</i> , or <i>ninnan</i> . |
| 2. Atat <i>ti</i> , or <i>tithan</i> . | 2. Atoch <i>chwi</i> , or <i>chwithan</i> . |
| 3. } Ato <i>ef</i> , <i>fe</i> , <i>fo</i> , or <i>ynnan</i> . | 3. Atynt <i>hwy</i> , or <i>hwythan</i> . |
| } Ati <i>hi</i> , or <i>hithan</i> . | |

486. *Apposition and government.* The government of words, put in apposition with pronouns, depends on the force intended to be expressed by the apposition words. They are put either in the *radical* or the *middle* sound.

487. When a substantive, or substantive word, is put in apposition with a pronoun, and does not require to be emphatically expressed, its initial consonant is put in the *middle* sound.

Nyni, *lawb oll*, a bechasom.

Glanhewch eich dwylaw, *chwi bechaduriaid.* *James iv. 8.*

I'ch cadw *chwi*, *ddynionach musgrell, segur.* *Theo. Evans.*

488. When the apposition is to be marked with emphasis, it very properly retains its *radical* and strong form; as

Chwi, gwyr y doniau mawr, a gyfeiliornasoch.

489. When one pronoun is put in apposition with another, the apposition pronoun generally retains the *radical*; as

Gwerthwyd *ni*, *myfi a'm pobl.*

Dos [*di*] allan o'r arch, *ti a'th wraig.*

490. *Fy hun*, &c. = *myself*. The pronouns *fy hun*, *dy hun*, &c. *myself*, *thyself*, &c. have generally the same position assigned to them as their corresponding words in English.

Catwg *ei hun* a'i lladdodd ef,

Catwg a'i lladdodd ef *ei hun*,

Catwg a laddodd *ei hun*,

Cato himself killed him.

Cato killed him, himself.

Cato killed himself.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

491. Possessive pronouns (except *mau* and *tau*) precede the nouns or the nouns and concomitants to which they belong; as

Fy nhad. Fy anwyl dad. Gwlad fy mam.

* See §. 350. &c.

492. When the possessive is required to be emphatic, a corresponding personal pronoun is by a peculiar idiom placed after the noun; as *Ei dad ef*=*his father of him; his father.* (§. 483.)

493. When still greater emphasis is required, the pronouns *fy hun, dy hun, &c.*=*own*, will be placed after the noun, with or without the personal pronoun; as

Fy nhad fy hun, my own father.
Fy nhad i fy hun, my own father.

494. *Mau* and *tau* are always placed *after* the noun which they modify, the noun being preceded by the definite article. [Order: *article, noun, pronoun.*]

Y llyfr mau. *Y glust fau.*
Y llyfr tau. *Y glust dau.*
 "Tro eilwaith atom *y glust dau.*" *Edm. Prys.*

495. *Eiddo*, *eiddot*, &c.=*mine, thine, that, those.*

Y llyfr hwn o'r eiddo. *Eiddo fi yw'r llyfr hwn.*
Rhagora ei gan ar eiddo ei gydymgeisydd.

(a) This form of the possessive does not exist in the colloquial language; and as *repetition* is a peculiarity well agreeing with the idiom of the Welsh language, some good critics doubt the propriety of admitting it as a part of Welsh Grammar. They regard it rather as a somewhat modern invention in imitation of the English possessive pronouns *mine, thine, &c.* Such expressions as

"*Y llyfr hwn o'r eiddo,*"
 "*Rhagora ei gan ar eiddo ei gydymgeisydd,*"

would undoubtedly be more idiomatically expressed in this manner:

"*Fy llyfr hwn.*"
 "*Rhagora ei gan ar gan ei gydymgeisydd.*"

(b) Some grammarians wish to lay down as a rule that an article should always be placed before the pronoun, to distinguish it from the substantive *eiddo*, property.

"*Oddi wrth yr eiddo y Gymraeg.*"

496. The possessives *fy, ym, dy, yth, ei, &c.* are by a peculiar idiom employed before verbs and participles, and between the component parts of certain compound prepositions.

"*Duw a'n (=a ein) gwnaeth ni.* *Duw sydd yn ein cadw.*
Daeth ar fy ol i.

*. See Syntax of "Verbs" and "Compound prepositions."

† Mau and tau are obsolete, except in poetry.

497. **Government.** *Ym, ein, eich, and eu,* are followed by the *radical* sound; as

Mi a'm tad. Efe a'm cosbodd. Daeth i'm cosbi.

498. *Dy, yth, and ei masculine,* by the *middle*; as


Dy dad. Efe a'th gosbodd. Daeth i'th gosbi.

499. *Fy,* by the *nasal* sound; as

Fy nhad. Daeth i fy nghosbi.

500. *Ei feminine,* by the *aspirate*; as


Ei thad. Daeth i'w chosbi.

501.  But when *ei mas.* and *ei fem.* are put before *finite* verbs, they are followed by the *radical*; as

Arthur a'i cosbod ef. Arthur a'i cosbodd hi.

502. Words beginning with a vowel have the *aspirate h* prefixed to them after the possessives *ym, ei (fem.) ein,* and *eu.*

Myfi a'm (=a ym) hawen. Efe a'm handwyodd.
Daeth i'm handwyo.

503.  When *ei (mas.)* precedes a *finite* verb, it should be followed by the *aspirate.*

Arthur a'i (=a ei) handwyodd ef.

504. *Fy dy, yth, and eich,* do not require the *aspirate* after them.

Fy iaith; dy iaith; ti a'th iaith; eich iaith.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

505. Demonstrative pronouns are used either by themselves, or in construction with nouns.

506. When joined to nouns or nouns and their concomitants, they take the last place, and the nouns will always be preceded by an *article* or its *equivalent*; as

Y gwr hwn=the man this. Y llafur blin yma.

Fy mab hwn=my son this. Ein blin gaethiwd hwn.

Nis goddef ein corph hwn i ni fod yn philosophyddion iawn. Ni-cander.

507. A singular noun with any numeral adjective above *one* requires the demonstrative to be in the plural number. ·

Y tri dyn *hyn*. Y ddau lyfr *hyny*.

508. *Hyn, hyny*. The neuter singulars *hyn, hyny*, &c. this, that, are used in South Wales for all genders; as “y llyfr *hyn*,” *mas.*; “y fraich *hyn*,” *fem.* In written language they are chiefly employed when a reference is made to a whole or a part of a sentence; as

Ni ddaeth fy nghyfaill: hyn sydd yn fy ngofidïo.

Hyn yw y cwbl a ddywedais, na ddeuwn yno.

Y cwbl a ddywedais yw hyn, na ddeuwn yno.

509. They are also used in connection with *peth*, a thing, and with words expressive of *time*; as *y peth hyn*; *y pryd hyny*.

510. When referred to by words having no neuter forms they are considered as *mas.* “*Hyn* a ddysgwyliais *ei glywed genych.*”

(a) The contracted forms *y rhai'n, y rhei'ny* (= *y rhai hyn, y rhai hyny*) are sometimes, but erroneously, coupled with substantives; as *y dynion rhai'n, y dynion rhei'ny*. We should say *y dynion hyn, y dynion hyny*.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS. (See “*Relative clause.*”)

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS. (See “*Interrogative clause.*”)

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS².

511. *Ambell*=*some few*, is usually followed by a singular noun, or a substantive word; as *ambell waith, ambell un*. [But we say *ambell rai*.] In colloquial language it is often followed by *i*; as ‘*ambell i waith*’; but this is not considered grammatically correct.

512. *Amryw* and *amrai*=*several*, take a plural noun; as *amryw* or *amrai ddynion*. Sometimes, however, *amryw* is followed by a noun in the singular; as *amryw fath*.

513. *Cyfryw* and *y fath*=*such*, are both sing. and pl. *Fath* (rad. *math*) is always, and *cyfryw* for the most part, preceded by *y*. *Y cyfryw^a ddyn*; *y gyfryw weithred*; *y*

² See §§. 187—192.

^a *Cyfryw* is an adjective, and hence it takes the form *cyfryw* when masculine, *gyfryw* when fem. after the article *y*. *Math* is strictly a fem. noun, and hence it always takes the middle sound after *y*.

fath lyfr; *y cyfryw ag a ddelont*; *y fath ag ydynt*. *Fath* (=sort), preceded by *pa*, forms an interrogative; *pa fath ddynion*?

514. *Dim*=no, any, (of a thing) is affirmative or negative. (a) *Affirmative*, as *A oes dim bai ynddo?*=any fault. *Cyn hod dim cymmanfaau*=any assemblies. (b) When *negative*, it is preceded by a negative particle; as *Nid wyf yn cael dim bai yn y dyn hwn*=no fault. It is also used as an auxiliary adverb: *Ni ddaeth efe ddim*=he did not come at all. [With *dim* as an adverb cf. the Latin *nihil*; as '*nihil cedimus Græciæ*']

515. *Holl*, and *oll*=all, whole, differ in that *holl* precedes, and *oll* follows, the noun. Each "takes a sing. or pl. noun, according as it means every part of one whole, or every individual of one species. *Y byd oll, yr holl fyd*=the whole world. *Y dinasoedd oll, yr holl ddinasoedd*=all the cities^b." *Oll* is sometimes used with an ellipsis of the substantive word with which it agrees; as *Daethant oll yma* (unders. *hwy*); *Ac oll sydd ynddynt* (unders. *yr hyn*).

516. *Llawer*=many, much. (a) It is followed by a sing. noun, and refers to number; as *llawer dyn*. [But we say *llawer rhai*.] (b) When it is followed by "o" (of), it may refer to number or quantity; if to quantity, the following noun is singular; if to number, the noun is plural. *Llawer o win*; *llawer o afalau*. (c) When it is used by itself it takes a pl. verb, like *many* in English. *Llawer a farnant fel hyn*.

517. *Ychydig*=a few, little. (a) When referring to quantity, &c. it takes a sing. noun with or without *o*; *Ychydig win*, *ychydig o win*; *ychydig leshâd*, *ychydig o leshâd*. (b) When referring to numerical objects, it takes a pl. noun, with or without *o*: *Ychydig ddynion*, *ychydig o ddynion*.

518. *Peth*=some, is strictly a noun, signifying a thing, something; but it is often used where the word *some* would be employed in English. *Peth daioni a gawd ynddo*=something of good; some good.

519. *Naill*=the one, and *y llall*, pl. *y lleill*=the other, are correlatives; as *Cymmer y naill neu y llall*. [*Naill* is also

^b *Hughes on "Syntax."*

a conjunction, and followed by *ai*; as *Naill ai tyred neu aros gartref.*]

520. *Pob*=*every*. (a) It is most usually followed by a noun in the singular; as *pob dyn*, every man. (b) But when signifying *every sort* or *kind*, it may have a pl. noun after it; as “Ac efe a gedwis lawer o *bob anifeiliaid*,”=*all sorts of animals*.

521. *Pawb*=*all*, *all men*, is plural, and should not be followed by a noun. ‘*Pawb a ddywedant hyn.*’ Some writers erroneously consider it as the plural of the adj. *pob*, and hence write ‘*pawb dynion*,’ &c.

522. *Rhyw*=*some, some sort of*, takes a sing. or plural noun. *Rhyw wr*; *rhyw wyr*.

523. *Rhai*=*some*, is plural, and hence is followed by a pl. noun, and pl. verb. *Rhai dynion*; *rhai a aethant*. When accompanied by another adjective, it is equivalent to ‘*ones*’ in English. *Rhyw rai, some ones*; *y rhai goludog, the wealthy ones*. It is also used as a relative pronoun, when preceded by *y* and not attended by another adjective. ‘*Y gwyr, y rhai a ddaethant yma.*’

524. *Sawl*=*many; whoever*. (a) When preceded by *pa* (but *pa* is frequently left out) and followed by a noun, it forms a question, as *pa sawl gwaith*, or *sawl gwaith?* (b) When preceded by *y* and not followed by a noun, it is a relative pronoun; as *y sawl a ddelont*.

525. *Un*=*one; any*, is (a) A definite numeral: *Y mae yma un dyn*. (b) An indefinite numeral, and as such is generally preceded by a negative: *Nid oes un dyn a all wneyd hyn.* (c) When preceded by the article *yr*, it signifies *the one; the same; whosoever*; as *Efe yw yr un a welais ddoe*; *yr un peth*; *yr un a ddelo a wobrwyr*. [When *yr un* is equivalent to *the same*, it may agree with a sing. or pl. noun; as *yr un llyfr*; *yr un llyfrau*.]

The article is sometimes, but erroneously according to some critics, put before *un*, when *un* signifies simply *one* or *any*. ‘*Nid oedd yr un o honynt yno.*’ ‘*Gellid gweled nas meddai yr un galon.*’ *Ellis Wynn*.

526. *Unrhyw*=*the same, any*, is both sing. and pl. *Cymmeraf unrhyw beth* (or *bethau*) *a fynoch.* ‘*Nid oes*

unrhyw briodoliaeth a ddichon adroddi hwsfod Duw.' 'Unrhyw yw y tad.'

527. *Neb*=*nobody, no one; any body, any one*, is both affirmative and negative. (a) *Affirmative*; as *Od oes neb yn caru y byd*. (b) When negative, it is preceded (like *dim*) by a negative particle; 'as *Nid oes iachawdwriaeth yn neb arall*.' [Cf. Gr. *Οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν ἅλλῃ οὐδένῃ ἡ σωτηρία*]. (c) Preceded by *y*, it forms a relative: *Y neb a wnelo hyn*.

Neb is strictly a substantive pronoun, and hence should stand by itself. Yet we sometimes find a noun or substantive word following it, both in composition of words and in Syntax.

Nebawd, nobody; nebdyn, no person; neble, no place; nebrhyw, no, any.

'Ac nad elom mewn *neb rhyw berygl*.' *Common Prayer*.

'Na chymmeradwywn *neb rhyw swyddogion* nad ydynt yn medru iaith y wlad.' *Carnhuanawc*.

VERBS.

528. *Agreement. Nom. preceding.* When the nominative case precedes the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as

Myfi a ddywedais. Tydi a ddywedaist.

Duw a ddywedodd. Efe a ddywediodd.

Y dynion a ddywedasant. Hwyl a ddywedasant.

(a) This rule regards only propositions of simple narration; for when antithesis or particular emphasis is to be laid on some part of the sentence, the verb may disagree with its nom. both in number and person, as will be seen hereafter. But even in simple narration a verb in the sing. number is often joined to a plural nominative.

"Gerddi a gweunydd *gyll* eu gwawr." *D. Davis*.

"A dieifi a'i *teifi* yn y tan." *Gor. Owen*.

529. *Verb preceding.* When the nominative case is a noun and follows the verb, then the verb is put in the third person singular, whether the nominative be singular or plural; as

Daeth y dysgybl.

Rhedodd y bachgen.

Daeth y dysgyblion.

Rhedodd y bechgyn.

530. "When however several verbs are coupled together, and the nom. to the first is the nom. to all the others, then

though the first verb be *sing.* with a plural nom. in accordance with the above law, yet the nom. being now *known*, all the other verbs will be plural; as

Crynodd y ceidwaid, ac *aethant* megys yn feirw^c."

531. When the nom. case is a *pronoun*, whether *preceding* or *following* the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as

Efe a *ddaeth*; *daeth* efe.
Hwy a *ddaethant*; *daethant* hwy.

532. A collective noun is sometimes followed by a singular, and sometimes by a plural verb; as

A lliaws a *ddaeth*.
A'r holl liaws a *lefasant*.

533. A singular noun with a numeral adjective (except *un*) is followed by a plural verb; as

Y ddau ddysgybl a'i *clywsant* ef yn llefaru.

534. When two or more singular nouns are connected together by a copulative conjunction, they are usually followed by a plural verb: sometimes by a singular; as

Pedr ac Ioan a *atebasant*.
Arthur a Dafydd a *orchfygasant* y gelynion.
Moses ac Elias a *ymddangosodd* iddynt.

(a) Strictly speaking, the verb should not be put in the sing. except when the assertion is true of the nom. cases, taken severally.

"Pedr ac Ioan a *aeth*" = 'Pedr a *aeth*,' and 'Ioan a *aeth*.'

535. When pronouns of different persons, or pronouns and substantives, are coupled together by copulative conjunctions, the verb, if *following*, will be in the pl. number, and refer to the nom. of the most worthy person. [The 1st person is more worthy than the 2d; and the 2d than the 3d.]

Myfi a thydi a *awn*. *Tydi* ac efe a *ewch*.
'*Mi* a'm tylwyth a *wasanaethon* yr Arglwydd.' Josh. xxiv. 15.

536. If the verb *precede* its nominatives, it will be made to agree in number and person with the one next to it; as

Aethym i a thydi. Aeth efe a'i gyfeillion.
Aethost ti ac efe. Aethom ni a chwi.

537. When antithesis or opposition is implied in the nom. case, the verb, following it, is put in the *third person singular*, for all numbers and persons. [This construction will be rendered into English by '*it is*,' or (in questions) '*is it*,' with a relative sentence.

Myfi a ysgrifennodd y llythyr hwn.
Tydi a wnaeth hyn.
Ai chwi ynte eich cefndyr a ddaw?

538. Similarly, words connected by disjunctive conjunctions are followed by *third person sing.* of the verb, for all numbers and persons; as

Naill ai tydi ai myfi a ddywedodd hyn.
Naill ai chwi neu y gwyr hyn a ddywedodd.

539. Position. The position of words in a sentence depends on the emphasis intended to be laid on them. In Welsh, as in other languages, the most important word takes precedence. In ordinary discourse, when no particular emphasis is intended to be expressed, or where the verb, as being the main part of the clause, may be regarded as emphatic, the order will stand thus: *verb, subject, predicate* or *object*.

Penodir Arthur yn frenin.
Gwnaeth Duw y byd.
Ni wnaeth y brenin ddeddf.

(a) In English the case is quite the reverse. "Shines forth the cheerful sun," is said to be *rhetorically* arranged, whereas, in Welsh, "Ymddysgleiria'r heulwen oleu," is arranged *conventionally*.

540. Some clauses will always have this order, whether they be simple or emphatic; such as,

Imper. Bydded golenadau.
Interr. made by a. A wnaeth y brenin ddeddf?
Time. Pan wnaeth y brenin ddeddf.
Motive. Fel y gwnelo y brenin ddeddf.

541. When the verb is periphrastic, the subject generally intervenes between the auxiliary and the other part; as

Y mae y brenin yn dyfod.

(a) Cf. the English interrogative, "Do *riches* make men happy?"

542. When the subject of the clause is to receive emphasis, the order of construction will be **subject, verb, predicate or object**.

Arthur a benodir yn frenin. Duw a wnaeth y byd.
Y brenin sydd yn dyfod. Y brenin ni wnaeth ddeddf.

(a) Good critics are of opinion that this arrangement should be adopted only when the emphasis falls on the subject of the verb, as above; yet many Welsh writers (and especially translators) continually express ordinary discourse in this manner. Occasionally, indeed, this construction is elegantly used, especially when a series of similar clauses follow one another, and where the same order of words would render the sentences too monotonous.

543. When the emphasis falls on the predicate, or the object of the verb, the clause will be thus arranged: **predicate or object, verb, subject**.

Yn frenin y penodir Arthur. Y byd a wnaeth Duw.
Dyfod y mae y brenin. Deddf ni wnaeth y brenin.

544. Some clauses will always be arranged according to the order in the two preceding rules, irrespective of emphasis; as

Rel. { Arthur, yr hwn a'm tarawodd.
 { Arthur, yr hwn a darewais.

Interr. made by { Ai Arthur a'm tarawodd?
ai and onid. { Ai Arthur a darewais?

Nominal Interr. made { Pwy a'm tarawodd?
by pwy, &c. { Pwy a darewais?

545. For the sake of still greater emphasis and vivacity, a sentence may be thus arranged: **subject, predicate or object, verb**; or **verb, predicate or object, subject**; or we may completely transpose the conventional order, and have **predicate or object, subject, verb**.

Pob elfen ufudd-dod a roes.
Rhoes ufudd-dod pob elfen.
Ufudd-dod pob elfen a roes.

546. Thus, in accordance with the foregoing observations on position, the same sentence may be arranged in six different ways.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| a. Penodir Arthur yn frenin. | } <i>Simple.</i> |
| Rhoes pob elfen ufudd-dod. | |
| b. Arthur a benodir yn frenin. | } <i>Somewhat emphatic.</i> |
| Pob elfen a roes ufudd-dod. | |

- c. Yn frenin y *penodir* Arthur.
 Ufudd-dod a *roes* pob elfen.
 d. Arthur yn frenin a *benodir*.
 Pob elfen ufudd-dod a *roes*
 e. Yn frenin Arthur a *benodir*.
 Ufudd-dod pob elfen a *roes*^a.
 f. *Penodir* yn frenin Arthur.
Rhoes ufudd-dod pob elfen.
- } *Rhetorical.*

547. **Government.** When the subject *immediately* follows a finite verb, it retains its *radical* initial; as

Daeth gwr dyeithr ataf.
 Cerir dyn fyddlawn.

(a) *Mi, ti*, and their compounds, take the *middle* sound; as *caraf fi*; *cerir finnau*; *ceri di*; *cerir dithau*. (See "Personal Pronouns.")

(b) Some tenses of the verb *bod*, and especially *oes*, when preceded by a negative adverb, are sometimes followed by their subject in the *middle* sound; as

Yn yr hwn *nid oes dwyll*. *Nid oes goffa* am dano.
 Efe a weddiodd *na byddai wlaw*. *James* v. 17.
Nid oes air o son am gael meddiant o un cwr. *Theo. Evans*.

548. A *finite* verb governs its object in the *middle*; an *infinitive* verb governs its object in the *radical* sound; as

Finite. Gwnawn *ddyn*. Ceisiaf *ddyfod*.
Inf. Ofui *dyn*. Ceisio *dyfod*.

549. The pronoun *ti* and its compounds are softened after the infinitive.

Y mae yn dy garu *di*. (See "Pers. Pronouns.")

550. An infinitive verb, heading a *transitive clause* (= *that* with a *finite verb*) is put in the *middle* sound, whether the verb on which it depends be *finite* or *infinitive*. [The *transitive clause* will be explained hereafter.]

Efe a ddywed *ddarlenn* o hono y llyfr.
 Dywedir *ddarlenn* a hono y llyfr.
 Y mae yn dweyd *ddarlenn* o hono y llyfr.

551. But the verb *bod*, even when it introduces a *transitive clause*, and is equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb*, is

^a Or *ufudd-dod*, pob elfen *a'i rhoes*.

by many writers put in the *radical* or *middle*, according as the verb, on which it depends, is a *finite active* verb; or a *finite passive*, or an *infinitive*; i. e. it is put in the *middle* sound after a *finite active*; but in the *radical* after a *finite passive*, or an *infinitive* verb.

Efe a ddywed fod Arthur yn darllen.

Dywedir bod Arthur yn darllen.

Y mae yn dweyd bod Arthur yn darllen.

(a) This may have arisen from want of due observation of the different meanings of *bod*. In the sentence, "Yr wyf yn bwriadu bod yno," *bod* implies simply "to be," and should retain its *radical* initial. In the sentence, "Yr wyf yn meddwl bod Arthur yno," *bod* signifies "that . . . is," and should according to analogy have its *soft* form 'fod.'

552. If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by 'an intervenient word or phrase,' the subject or the object will be put in the *middle* sound. The expression 'an intervenient word or phrase,' which is here used for want of a more suitable term, stands for

a. *An adverb.*

Yr oedd yno ddynion dewr.

Gwnaethpwyd yno wledd fawr o bob moethau da. *Theo. Evans.*

Tynu ymaith bechodau. Bwrw allan gythreuliaid.

b. *A word governed by a preposition*.*

Yr oedd yn y synagog ddyn.

Y sychedig yn tynu o'r ffynnon ddyfroedd iechydwrïaeth. *W. Davies.*

Ni a ddylem alw i gof fywyd Crist. *Nicander.*

Rhodddwyd iddo bin ysgrifenydd buan. *W. Davies.*

c. *An address or exclamation.*

Yr wyf yn bwriadu, gyfaill, ddyfod i'th weled.

d. *An apposition word.*

Yr oedd yn bresennol feddygon medrus.

e. *An auxiliary verb.*

Ceisio y maent dduwiau ereill. Cadw yr ydys ddeddfau Omri.

(a) "But if a word, which of its own nature requires another form, comes between the subject or the object and the verb, then the subject or the object will take that form which this word requires^f."

Gwelais ei gwr. Gwelais yno dy frawd.

* Pronominal prepositions are here included.

^f *Dr. Davies.*

553. Observation. The above rule (§. 552.) is sometimes violated in poetical works, and occasionally in prose; the word being made to retain its *radical* sound, whereas it ought to be put in the *middle*.

"Ni phrofais dan ffurfafen

"Gwe mor gaeth a'r Gymraeg wen." *E. Prys.* [*Gwe* for *we*.]

"Trwy gyfrwyddaw yn hyddu pob rhyw ansawdd." *Henri Perri.*
[*Pob* for *beb*.]

But when the word begins a quotation, or when it is very far removed from the verb, it may perhaps very properly retain its *radical* initial; as

"Lle y gosodwyd yn yr Hydref diweddaf, ar fur y Ganghell, uwch ben ei fedd, Gwyddfaen o faen marmawr." *Tegid.*

Auxiliary affirmative particles.

Auxiliary affirmative pronouns. (See §. 481.)

554. The *auxiliary affirmative adverbs* are *a*, *y*, *yr*, (*yd*, *ydd*.) *A* is used before the verb when the *nom.* or *accus.* of the verb precedes; as

Dnw a greodd y byd.

Y dyn, yr hwn a darewaist ti.

555. *Y*, *yr*, and formerly *yd* and *ydd*, are used when the *nom.* and *accus.* follow the verb, but some other part of the sentence precedes it; as

Yna y dywedodd efe=then (it was) he said.

I'r pentref acw *yr* aeth efe.

(a) *A* governs the *middle* sound. *Y* is used before a *consonant*, and followed by the *radical*: *yr* is put before a *vowel*.

*. For further explanation of auxiliary affirmative adverbs, see Syntax of "Adverbs."

556. The use of possessive pronouns before verbs. There is a peculiar idiom in Welsh of employing the possessive pronouns before verbs; a point in which the language differs essentially from the Greek, Latin, and English. These possessives, or, as they are called by some, "introductory pronouns," are for the most part used in connection with personal pronouns. Sometimes they serve as harbingers indicating that another pronoun is to follow; and sometimes they reflect on a word that has gone before in the sentence. In some places they are apparently redundant; but when they are employed in a certain case before the infinitive mood, they perform an important office, namely, that of converting *active verbs* and *active participles* into *passive*.

557. These pronouns, when placed before verbs, generally suffer an elision, and are thus written :

<i>Sing.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>		
1	2	3	1	2	3
'm	'th	'i (or 'w, as i'w.)	'n	'ch	'u (or 'w, as i'w.)
for	for	for	for	for	for
<i>Ym</i>	<i>yth</i>	<i>ei</i>	<i>ein</i>	<i>eich</i>	<i>eu.</i>

558. Before transitive verbs. When the subject precedes an inflected verb, having a *personal pronoun*^s for its object, a corresponding possessive is placed immediately before the verb, indicating that a personal pronoun is to follow ; as

Duw a'n gwnaeth ni.
Arthur a'th garodd di.

(a) When the possessive precedes, the personal pronoun is usually omitted, unless it is to be emphatic. (Duw a'n gwnaeth. Arthur a'th garodd.)

559. When the auxiliary particles *y* and *yr* precede the verb (in which case the subject follows the verb), the possessive pronoun may or may not be used. When it is expressed, the objective personal pronoun is generally omitted; when it is not, the personal pronoun should always be expressed.

Possessive expressed.
Yno y'm daliasant.
Fel y'n gwardai.

Possessive omitted.
Yno y daliasant fi.
Fel y gwardai ni.

(a) In this case some write *ym*, *yth*, *ei*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*, without a mark of contraction; others employ an apostrophe, and write *y'm*, *y'th*, *y'i*, *y'n*, *y'ch*, *y'u*. While the former mode is the more common, the latter is certainly the more correct; for, as it is evident, the particle *y* is in the above construction present before each of the pronouns. "Yno y'm daliasant," would be written at full length, "Yno y *ym* daliasant."

560. The same rule (§. 559.) is applicable to a negative sentence, when the subject follows the verb.

Possessive expressed.
Ni'th gerais.
Ni'm carodd.

Possessive omitted.
Ni cherais di.
Ni charodd fi.

^s If the reflexive *hun* or *hunan* be the object of the verb, the possessive is employed by some, by others omitted. Arthur a laddodd ei hun, or a'i lladdodd ei hun. "Ymwrolodd rhai dinasoedd ereill i'w hamddiffyn eu hunain." Ch. Edwards. Ddarfod iddynt eu twyllu eu hunain. Nicander.

(a) But the third person is an exception, the possessive being never placed before it in a negative proposition.

Ni cherais *ef*. Nicharasom *hwynt*.

561. A possessive pronoun will always precede an infinitive verb, provided it has a personal pronoun for its object. [The *participles* are here included.]

Y mae Arthur yn *ei* garu *ef*.
 Duw sydd yn *fy* nghynnal *i*.
 Addawodd Arthur *fy* nysgu *i*.
 Rhag iddo *eich* difetha *chwi*.
 Gan *ei* rwygo *ef*.

562. When the object of the infinitive takes precedence in the clause, a possessive pronoun will be inserted immediately before the infinitive. In this case the object may be a *noun* as well as a personal pronoun.

563. The poss. pron. agrees with the preceding objective in *number* and *gender*; but the *third person* is always to be used. [This is a case in which the possessive does not indicate that a pers. pron. is to follow.]

Y dyn *hwn* yr wyf yn *ei* garu.
 Y fenyw *hon* yr wyf yn *ei* charu.
 Y rhai y medraf eu darllen.
 Os *myfi* yr ydych yn *ei* geisio.
 Os *tydi* y maent yn *ei* geisio.

564. Before intransitive and passive verbs. We have seen that the possessives are employed before *transitive* verbs in connection with words (especially *pers. pronouns*) in the *objective case*; but they are employed before *intransitive* and *passive* verbs in connection with words (especially *pers. pronouns*) in the *nominative case*.

565. a. *Intransitive verbs*. The verb *Bod*, and other intransitive verbs, when used in the infinitive as the main verbs of a clause, are often followed by their subject; and if, in this case, the subject be a pers. pronoun, the infinitive will always be preceded by a corresponding possessive.

Dywed *fy* mod *i* yn gywir.
 Dywed *dy* fod *di* yn darllen.
 O herwydd *ei* fod *ef* yn dyfod.
 Dywed *ei* fyned *ef* i'r dref.

566. b. *Passive verbs*. The possessives are placed before

passive verbs, when these verbs precede their subjects, and are themselves preceded by other words:

Fe'm dysgir i. Mal y'm dysger i.
Pan y'm dysger i.

567. The Infinitive passive. The infinitive passive is formed by placing before the simple infinitive a possessive pronoun, corresponding to the noun or pronoun which would be the subject, if the infinitive were analysed, and expressed by a finite verb. For example, in the expression "I came to be taught," *to be taught* is equivalent to 'that I might be taught:' here the subject of the infin. is the same with that of the verb on which it depends. Again, in "I sent him to be taught," *to be taught* is equivalent to 'that he might be taught:' here the subject of the infin. is the same with the *object* of the main verb. Hence

568. If, in Welsh, the governing verb be *intransitive*, the infinitive will be preceded by a poss. pronoun, corresponding to the *subject* of the governing verb.

Mi a ddaethym i'm dysgu=I came to *my* teaching; to be taught=that I might be taught.

569. If the governing verb be *transitive*, the infinitive will be preceded by a poss. pronoun, corresponding to the *object* of the governing verb.

Anfonais ef i'w ddysgu=I sent him to *his* teaching; to be taught=that he might be taught.

570. Observation. The infinitive, having thus acquired a passive signification, will consequently not admit a personal pron. after it; so that the general difference in form between a *transitive* and a *passive* infinitive is, that the former has, and the latter has not, an *objective personal pronoun*. The pron. may or may not come after a transitive, according to the degree of emphasis required; but it can never come after a passive.

Transitive. Daethym i'w ddysgu ef, } *I came to teach him.*
 or Daethym i'w ddysgu, }
Passive. Daeth i'w ddysgu, *he came to be taught.*

571. The auxiliary *cael*, (to have,) is very often borrowed to express the infinitive passive.

Mi a ddaethym i gael fy nysgu—I came to have my teaching; I came to be taught.

Anfonais ef i gael ei ddysgu—I sent him to have his teaching; that he might be taught.

. The *passive participles*, being formed from the passive infinitive by prefixing certain particles to them, fall under the preceding observations. [See §. 283.]

THE VERB BOD, to be.

572. Difference between *sydd*, *mae*, *yw*, and *oes*. The Welsh language has these four different forms to express the 3d person Indicative of *bod*. Each form has its own place and import; so that one cannot be employed optionally for the other, without altering the construction of the sentence, and, in most cases, giving it a different signification.

573. General rule. *Sydd* follows its subject: *mae* and *oes* precede: *yw* sometimes precedes, and sometimes follows.

Arthur *sydd* yn filwr.
Y *mae* Arthur yn filwr.
Nid *oes* arian ganddo.

Milwr *yw* Arthur.
Yr hwn *yw* dy law.

Special rules.

574. *Sydd*^b is used when the emphasis is thrown on the *subject*, and has strictly an antithetical or exceptional force, equivalent to the English words "*it is . . that.*" It often however loses its antithetical force, being used in sentences where the copula implies simply 'is.'

(a) *Sydd* (sometimes written *yssydd*) is probably compounded of *ys*=*is*, and *ydd*=*it*, thus literally signifying *is it or it is*.

575. *Sydd* is preceded by its *subject*, and followed by an *indefinitive* word or predicate. [Order: *subject*, *copula*, *predicate*.]

Arthur *sydd* yn frenin.
Arthur *sydd* yn ddoeth.
Arthur *sydd* yn darllen.

Arthur *sydd* yma.
Arthur *sydd* yn y ty.

^b Some Welsh scholars wish to lay down as a rule that *sydd* should be placed before vowels, and *sy* before consonants. Pwy *sydd* acw? Pwy *sy* draw? (*Tegid's* "*Jawn-lythyreniad*," p. 14.) But while this distinction conduces to euphony of expression, it tends to obscure the etymology of the word.

(a) Such construction as "Y neb sydd ganddo ddwy bais" should probably be "Y neb sydd a chanddo ddwy bais;" or "Y neb sydd a dwy bais ganddo."

576. If the predicate following the verb be *definitive*, *yw* will be substituted for *sydd*.

Indef. Arthur *sydd yn frenin*. *Def.* Arthur *yw y brenin*.

577. The terms *definitive* and *indefinitive* should be explained here. By a *definitive word* is meant the *definite article*, either expressed or virtually implied in another word. In the sentence, "Arthur yw y brenin," the article is *expressed*; in "Arthur yw fy mrenin," it is implied in the pron. *fy*. An *indefinitive word* is that which has no article, either expressed or implied; e. g. *adverbs, prepositions with their case, participles, and nouns and adjectives* admitting '*yn apposition*' before them.

578. If the subject of *sydd* be a relative pronoun, it will very often be left out; as

Ffoi oddi with y digofaint *sydd* ar ddyfod. *Luke* iii. 7.

Melldigedig yw pob un *sydd* yng nghrog ar bren. *Gal.* iii. 13.

579. *Negation*. Particles of negation should *immediately* precede the words intended to be negated. In a sentence with *sydd* the subject is usually the negated term. The particle will then immediately precede it; and, as the verb is not affected by negative particles unless they immediately precede it, *sydd* will remain unchanged.

Affirm. Arthur *sydd* frenin. *Neg. Nid* Arthur *sydd* frenin.

'*Nid* chwydychwi *sydd yn* dywedyd, ond yr Ysbryd Glan.' *Mark* xiii. 11.

580. Sometimes however the copula is the negated term, and as '*sydd*' can never be immediately preceded by a negative particle, the copula *yw* (pl. *ydynt*) is substituted for it.

Affirm. Yn hwn *sydd* yr caru. *Neg.* Yr hwn *nid yw yn* caru.

[Cariad *nid yw yn* cenfigenu. 1 *Cor.* xiii. 4. A'r gwirionedd *nid yw yn*om. 1 *John* i. 8. Arfau ein Milwriaeth *ni nid ydynt* gnawdol. 2 *Cor.* x. 4.]

581. *Suppositions* introduced by *od, os*; and *Interrogations* introduced by *a, onid, &c.* require the same construction as negative clauses.

582. **Mae.** *Mae* is used when 'the emphasis is on the deed or fact announced by it.' It signifies '*is*' and '*there is*.'

583. *a. Mae*, signifying '*is*,' is connected with *yw*. It must always precede its subject, and be accompanied by an *indefinite* word or predicate.

Y mae Arthur yn frenin.
Y mae Arthur yn ddoeth.
Y mae Arthur yn darllen.

Y mae Arthur yma.
Y mae Arthur yn y ty.

584. *Position of predicate.* The predicate usually comes after the subject, as in the foregoing examples. [Order: copula, subject, predicate.]

585. Sometimes it intervenes between the copula and the subject; as

Y mae yn aros ffydd, gobaith, a chariad. 1 Cor. xiii. 13.
Mae yn anghenrheidiol fod ynddi gyflawnder o eiriau. *Blackwell*.

586. When *mae* is auxiliary, the accompanying participle and its dependents may precede it; or the object of the participle may precede, and the participle itself follow the copula.

Aros y mae ffydd. *Ei geisio ef y mae* Arthur.
Efe y mae Arthur *yn ei geisio*. *Yr hwn y mae* Arthur *yn ei geisio*.

(*a*) When the participle comes before the verb, '*yn participial*' is generally left out. Thus we have "*aros y mae* ffydd," for "*yn aros*," &c.

587. If prepositions and their case, or adverbs of similar import, or conjunctive adverbs, begin the sentence, they are followed by *mae*.

Yma y mae Arthur. *Yn yr hun y mae* twyll.
Sut y mae Arthur? *At hwn y mae* Arthur yn dyfod.
Pa le y mae Arthur yn myned? *Pan y mae* yn dwyn.

Tra y mae hi yn ddydd.

[*Lle y mae* ysbryd yr Arglwydd yno y mae rhyddid. 2 Cor. iii. 17.
Pa le y mae dy hen drugareddau? *Psa.* lxxxix. 49.]

588. If a noun or adjective, having '*yn apposition*' before it, precede the copula, *yn* is sometimes retained, and

the copula will be *mae*; but most usually *yn* is dropped, and then *yw* will be substituted for *mae*.

'Yn' retained. Yn frenin y mae Arthur.

'Yn' omitted. Brenin yw Arthur.

589. The subject of *mae*, if it be a pronoun, is frequently omitted; as

Y mae [efe] yn gwaredu.

590. *Negation*. *Mae* is never *immediately* preceded by a negative particle: therefore, if in a negative proposition the copula is the term to be negated, *yw* will be substituted for *mae*.

Affirm. Y mae Arthur yn frenin. *Neg.* Nid yw Arthur yn frenin.
Y mae Arthur yn rhyfela. Nid yw Arthur yn rhyfela.

591. *Suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*, and *Interrogations* introduced by *a* and *onid*, require the same construction as negative propositions.

Supp. Os yw Arthur yn frenin.

Interr. A yw Arthur yn frenin?

592. *β. Mae*, signifying 'there is,' is connected with *oes*, 'there is.' Both words occupy the same position as *mae* = *is*. *Mae* occurs in *affirmative* propositions; *oes* in *negative* propositions; in *suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*; and in *interrogations* introduced by *a* and *onid*.

Affirm. Y mae ganddo arian. Y mae rhywun yn dyfod.

Neg. Nid oes ganddo arian. Nid oes neb yn dyfod.

Supp. Os oes ganddo arian. Os oes rhywun yn dyfod.

Interr. A oes ganddo arian? A oes rhywun yn dyfod?

593. In answer to a question made by 'a oes,' the same verb is employed, and sometimes *mae* is added; as

A oes ganddo arian? Oes; or oes, y mae.

Yw or ydyw¹.

594. *Affirmative sentences*. *Yw* is used when the emphasis is to be laid on the predicate: hence *yw* is preceded by the predicate, and followed by the subject. [Order: predicate, copula, subject.]

¹ There is no difference of meaning between *yw* and *ydyw*. In South Wales the simple form of the verb is preferred: *wyf, wyt, yw; ym, ych, ynt*. In North Wales the compound form is preferred: *ydwyf, ydwyt, ydyw; ydym, ydych, ydynt*.

Here the predicate must be a *noun* or *adjective*, unaccompanied by '*yn apposition.*'

Brenin yw Arthur. Doeth yw Arthur.
Ysgrifenedig yw y gair.

[*Cadarn yw dy law ac uchel yw dy ddeheulaw. Ps. lxxxix. 13. Da yw moliannu yr Arglwydd. Ps. xcii. 1. Gwaith mawr yw ceisio ei foddhau.*]

(a) If '*yn apposition*' be retained, *mae* should be employed. *Yn frenin y mae* (not *yw*) *Arthur.*

(b) If prepositions with their case, or adverbs of like import, or conjunctive adverbs, precede, the copula should be *mae*, not *yw*; as *sut y mae fy nghyfaill*, not '*sut yw fy nghyfaill.*' Yet in the Welsh version of the Bible we occasionally meet with such sentences as the following. *Pan yw yn dwyn, (Heb. i. 6.)* for *Pan y mae yn dwyn.* *Tra yr ydyw hi yn ddydd, (John ix. 4.)* for *Tra y mae hi yn ddydd.* *Pan yw fy nhad a'm mam yn fy ngwrthod, (Ps. xxvii. 10.)* for *Pan y mae fy nhad, &c.*

595. When the predicate is *definitive* by being preceded by the article, or when in its own nature it is *definitive*, it may interchange position with the subject: i. e. the copula *yw* may follow the subject, and precede the predicate; or follow the predicate, and precede the subject, as above. [Order: subject, copula, definitive predicate; or definitive predicate, copula, subject.]

Arthur yw y brenin; or Y brenin yw Arthur.

Hi yw dy fywyd; or Dy fywyd yw hi.

Cydeiniaid yw esgyrn geiriau; or Esgyrn geirian yw cydeiniaid.

[*Yr Arglwydd yw ein tarian, a Sanct Israel yw ein brenin. Ps. lxxxix. 18. Yr Arglwydd yw yr Ysbryd. 2 Cor. iii. 17. Yr hon yw gogoniant yr holl diroedd. Ezek. vi. 20. Yr hwn yw dy gledddyf di. Yr hwn yw delw Duw. 2 Cor. iv. 4. Diwedd y rhai yw distryw. Phil. iii. 19. Cyfiawnder a barn yw trigfa dy orseddfainc. Ps. lxxxix. 14. Prif ddyben y traethawd hwn ydyw adferu cyssondeb. Tegid.*]

(a) But if the subject precede, and the predicate be *indefinitive*, *sydd*, not *yw*, must be used. We should therefore write,

Arthur sydd yn frenin, (not Arthur yw yn frenin.)

Arthur sydd yn ddoeth, (not Arthur yw yn ddoeth.)

Arthur sydd yn rhyfela, (not Arthur yw yn rhyfela.)

Arthur sydd yn y ty, (not Arthur yw yn y ty.)

Arthur sydd yma, (not Arthur yw yma.)

596. The subject or the predicate, following the copula, is sometimes omitted, when it can be supplied from the preceding sentence; as

Dywedaf am yr Arglwydd, fy noddfa a'm hamddiffynfa ydyw.
Ps. xci. 2.

Can's Arglwydd noddfawr yw i ni. *E. Prys.*

597. *Negative sentences.* In a proposition, of which the copula is *yw*, the term to be negated is usually the first, whether it be the predicate or the subject.

Affirm. Brenin yw Arthur. *Neg. Nid brenin yw* Arthur.
 Arthur yw y brenin. *Nid Arthur yw* y brenin.

598. *Yw* will admit of being *immediately preceded* by a negative particle: hence it is substituted for *mae* and *sydd*, when these copulas are to be negated.

Affirm.

Negative.

Sydd. Yr hwn *sydd* yn darllen. *Yw.* Yr hwn *nid yw* yn darllen.

Mae. Y *mae* efe yn darllen. *Yw.* *Nid yw* efe yn darllen.

Thus *yw* takes the place of *sydd*, and of *mae* (=is), and *oes* that of *mae* (=there is) in *negative sentences*.

599. *Suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*; and *Interrogations* introduced by *ai* and *onid*, require the same construction as *negative sentences*.

Os cuddiedig yw ein hefengyl ni. 2 *Cor.* iv. 3.

Ai cuddiedig yw ein hefengyl ni?

600. *AGREEMENT.* The rules laid down in §. 528, respecting the agreement of verbs with their nominatives in sentences of simple narration, will apply to the tenses of *Bod*.

A'r cerddorion a fyddant yno. *Ps.* lxxxvii. 7.

Ti, Arglwydd, fuost yn breswylfa. *Ps.* xc. 1.

Tydi wyt ddysgybl iddo ef.

(a) But the occurrence of the *singular* number of this verb preceded by a *plural* nominative is so common, both in written and colloquial language, that some good critics are of opinion that a *singular* and a *plural* verb may be indifferently joined to a *plural* nominative.

I bawb a fu o'm blaen i. *Eccles.* i. 16.

Y rhai oedd yn ei lu ef. *Dan.* iii. 20.

601. When the subject of discourse is antithetical, and the predicate an *indefinitive* term, *sydd* in present tense, and the *third person singular* in other tenses, will be put for all numbers and persons.

Myfi sydd yn myned.

Tydi sydd ddysgybl iddo ef.

Tydi a fydd yno.

Chwychoi a fydd yno.

602. When the verb is followed by a *definitive* noun or adjective, *yw* in present tense, and the 3d person singular in other tenses, will be put for all numbers and persons.

Myfi yw y bugail da. *Cydseniadaid yw cogyrn geiriau.*
Tydi yw fy anwyl fab. *Iuddewon oedd y gwyr hyn.*

[*Hwynt-hwy yw y gwir berehenogion.* *Y rhai yw dy law.* *Chwy-chwi yw ein gogoniant.* *Tydi yw y doethaf o'r cwbl.* *Chwi oedd y rhai a garaswn.*]

(a) Here the verb is referred to the term which follows rather than to that which precedes it: *e. g.* in the sentence "*Myfi yw y bugail da,*" *yw* is referred to *y bugail da*, not to the pron. *myfi*.

Why a verb singular is employed when the following term is plural, is explained on the principle alluded to in §. 529, that when the nominative is a noun and follows the verb, the verb should be singular, even when the nom. is plural.

603. *Sydd*. *Sydd* is an undeclinable verb, and is put in construction both with singular and plural nominatives; as,

Y gair sydd wirionedd. *Y milwr sydd yn dyfod.*
Y geiriau sydd wirionedd. *Y milwyr sydd yn dyfod.*

(a) Many, even of our best writers, not considering that *sydd* is itself plural as well as singular, frequently adopt *dydynt* as plural.

Tafodau ydynt arwydd, (1 *Cor.* xiv. 22.) for *Tafodau sydd arwydd*.

Y rhai ydynt yn gofyn aceniad iir. *Tegid.*
Hwythau ydynt yn gwahanu'r sacrament. *M. Kyffin.*
Ond y trigolion ydynt lesg. *Theo. Evans.*
Y rhai ydynt yn ei weled ef & llygaid yr enaid. *Nicander.*

(b) If the verb be negated, then *ydynt*, being the pl. of *yw*, (which is the substitute of *sydd*.) will very properly be used; as

Tafodau nid ydynt arwydd.
A'r holl bethau dymuol nid ydynt gyffelyb iddi. *Prov.* iii. 15.

APPOSITION VERBS.

604. In all languages there are some verbs capable of taking (a) two *nominatives*; namely, a subject-nominative which must be a noun or pronoun, and a predicative-nominative which may be a noun or adjective: (b) two *accusatives*, the former a noun or pronoun, the latter a noun or adjective.

[These are verbs of *being, becoming, seeming, calling, making, appointing, considering, thinking, choosing, &c.*

He is a man. *I offer my friend as witness.*
The man becomes troublesome. *He calls him an uncle.*
He is appointed general. *I take him for a father.]*

605. 'Yn apposition.' In Welsh these *second nominatives* and *second accusatives* are preceded by the particle 'yn,' which from the function it performs of setting words in apposition may be denominated 'yn^k apposition.'

(a) In English *a*, *an*, *as*, and *for* are sometimes used where in Welsh *yn* would be employed.

"I offer him *as* witness"=*cynnygiat ef yn dyst*.

To these may be added the prep. *into*, and the particle *in*, which in certain cases is exactly equivalent to *yn*, and probably of the same origin.

"Letters are divided *into* vowels and consonants"=*yn llafariad a chydseiniaid*.

"Ye shall have their carcases *in* abomination"=*yn ffieidd-dra*.

"And smoke to roll *in* dusky wreaths"=*yn amdyrch tywyllion*.

(b) In Greek the prep. *eis* is sometimes found where *yn* would be employed in Welsh.

Ἀποβήσεται . . . *eis* μαρτύριον=*yn dystiolaeth*. Luke xxi. 13.

Πῶλους *eis* δασμὸν τρεφόμενους=*yn deyrnged*. Xen.

606. The particle *yn* is used when the apposition word is an *indefinitive noun* or *adjective*. [Thus *yn*, with regard to its indefinite character, resembles *a* and *an*; but *yn* can be employed before pl. nouns and before predicative adjectives, whereas *a* and *an* cannot.]

Examples of *yn* before the *second nominative*.

Nid yw y rhai hyn *yn feddwoon*. Acts ii. 15.

Yr *hwn* a wnaed *yn ben* i'r gongl. Acts iv. 11.

Y mae *Arthur yn frenin* doeth.

Bydded ei *drigfan ef yn ddiffaethwch*. Acts i. 20.

Examples of *yn* before the *second accusative*.

A Duw a alwodd y *goleuni yn ddydd*. Gen. i. 5.

Hyd oni osodwyf dy *elynyion yn droed-fainc*. Acts ii. 35.

Hwn a ddychafodd Duw . . . *yn dywysog*. Acts v. 31.

Pa ham y gosodaist *fi yn nod* i ti? Job vii. 20.

607. If the word following the copula be a participle, an adverb, or a preposition with its case, *yn* cannot be used; as

Efe sydd *yn rhyfela*. Efe sydd *yma*. Efe sydd *gyda'r gwaith*.

^k *Yn* is probably a participle, signifying *being*, and of cognate origin with the Greek participle ὄν.

608. But if the apposition is an adjective, and preceded by qualifying adverbs, *yn* may be used; as

Y mae Arthur *yn dra ddygdedig*.

Y mae Arthur *yn wir ddygdedig*.

(a) *Mor* and *cyn* cannot be preceded by *yn*.

Arthur sydd *mor enwog* [not *yn mor enwog*.]

Arthur sydd *cyn enwoced* [not *yn gyn enwoced*.]

609. Government. *Yn* governs all the mutable consonants, except *Ll* and *Rh*, in the *middle* sound. *Ll* and *Rh* generally retain the *radical*.

Y mae Arthur *yn gawr* ac *yn ben* ar bawb.

Penodwyd Arthur *yn frenin*.

Ll and *Rh*. Y mae lwn *yn llŷfr bardd*, ac *yn rhad*.

610. Position. *Yn* immediately precedes the word or words forming the apposition. If an adjective precede the apposition noun, *yn* stands before the adjective; if an adverb precede the apposition adjective, *yn* stands before the adverb.

Dafydd sydd *yn ddyn*.

Dafydd sydd *yn ddygdedig*.

Dafydd sydd *yn hen ddyn*.

Dafydd sydd *yn wir ddygdedig*.

611. In ordinary discourse, whether the verb or subject precede, the apposition words are made to follow.

Bydd hyn *yn arwydd*.

Cyfrifir Arthur *yn ddygdedig*.

Cafodd Arthur geiniog *yn wobr*.

Hyn a fydd *yn arwydd*.

Arthur a gyfrifir *yn ddygdedig*.

(a) Sometimes the first nom. and first accus. are omitted.

Bu [*efe*] *yn llwyddiannus*. Y maent [*hwy*] *yn anffodiog*.

Efe a ollyngodd [*y dyn*] *yn rhydd iddynt*, yr hwn a fwriasid yng ngharchar. *Luke* xxiii. 25.

612. The apposition nom. sometimes takes the first place in the clause. Here the particle *yn* may be and often is omitted, the apposition word resuming its *radical* sound.

Yn ddygdedig y cyfrifir Arthur, or *Dygdedig* y cyfrifir Arthur.

Noeth y daethym o groth fy mam. *Job* i. 21.

(a) *Yn* affects the particle 'a' in the same way as a preposition does: hence if the predicate with *yn*, expressed or understood, goes before the verb, 'a' is changed into 'y,' or 'yr:' thus,

Arthur *a* gyfrifir *yn* ddygdedig.

Yn ddysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur. Dysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur.

The pres. and imperf. tenses of *Bod* however do not admit of the particle.

Cyfiawn ydyw Arthur [not *yr* ydyw.]

Cyfiawn oedd Arthur [not *yr* oedd.]

613. Sometimes the apposition nominative and apposition accusative precede the first nominative and first accusative.

Gwnaf yn ddyfnion eu dyfroedd hwynt. *Ezek. xxxii. 14.*

Hwnw a geidw yn fyw ei enaid. *Ezek. xviii. 27.*

Y maent yn gwneuthur yn llydain eu phylacterau. *Matt. xxiii. 5.*

A gyfrifwn yn lan un â chlorianau anwir? *Micah vi. 11.*

(a) In poetry the apposition word sometimes intervenes between the first nom. or first accus., and the verb; as

Y fesen yn dderwen a ddaw.

614. Omission of *yn*. It has been remarked that *yn* may be omitted when the predicate takes the first place in the clause. It should be further noted that, in connection with *bod*, it is often omitted even when the predicate follows the subject and verb.

Ti wyt ben=*yn ben*. A'u tafod sydd dwyllodrus=*yn dwyllodrus*.

Ei air oedd ddigonol=*yn ddigonol*. Nid yw hyn ran fawr=*yn rhan fawr*.

(a) Here the predicate has its initial in the *middle* sound, although *yn* is omitted. (Ei air oedd *ddigonol*.) Sometimes however the predicate is put in the *radical*; as

I'r dyn a fyddo da. *Eccles. ii. 26.* Gwr da a fydd trugarog fwyn. *E. Prys.* A safed yn ei burdeb cyssefin pan fyddo cyfansawdd. *Tegid.*

(b) Though *yn* governs *ll* and *rh* in the *radical*, (§. 609.) yet when *yn* is omitted, *ll* and *rh* usually take the *middle* sound. (Efe oedd *lywydd*. Nid yw hyn ran fawr.)

615. a. *Exception.* The infinitive *bod*, and the inflections *mae* and *maent*, do not admit of the omission of *yn*.

Am ei fod yn fychan. *Luke xix. 2.* (Not am ei *fod fychan*.)

Y mae yn rhydd i mi. Y maent yn arwyddion.

616. b. *Exception.* When the subject is a noun, and the order of the sentence is, *verb, subject, predicate*, '*yn*' should be retained, in order to prevent ambiguity.

Bydd Dafydd yn frenin. (Not 'Bydd Dafydd *frenin*.)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

617. The infin. mood is of very extensive usage in the Welsh language. It may be translated into English sometimes by 'to,' with infinitive; sometimes by a verbal noun; and sometimes by a finite verb with or without a governing particle.

618. "It may be found in any position competent for a noun to occupy. Thus it may be the subject of discourse, or objective to the verb; it may be followed by an adjective, or governed by a preposition¹." [With this usage of the infinitive compare the Greek.]

a.) Infinitive as *subject of a verb*.

Dylun drygioni a dywys i angau. Gweithio sydd boenus i'r diog.
Gweddus oedd iddo ef berffeithio. Rhaid yw cymmeryd poen.

"Caled ydyw *peidio* caru,
 "Caled hefyd *gwneuthur* hyny." *D. S. Evans.*

β.) Infinitive as *possessive case*.

Lloriau dyrru. Amser hau.

γ.) Infinitive as *object to a verb*.

Dymunaf ddygu. Mi a geisias ymroddi.
Efe a ddichon gynnorthwyo. Heb. ii. 18.

δ.) Infinitive as *object of a preposition*.

Wedi marw ei dad. Acts vii. 4. [Cf. Gr. μετὰ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ.]

Wrth ddarostwng. Heb. ii. 8. [Gr. ἐν τῷ ὑποτάξαι.]

Fy mryd ar geisio. Trwy rodio ger dy fron.

Heb ddal ar chwedlau. O'u cadw y mae gwobr lawer.

ε.) Infinitive *with adjective*.

Canu da. Dysgwyl ofnadwy.

619. A noun or pronoun under government of preposition often intervenes between the finite verb and the infinitive.

Erfyniais ar Arthur fy nghymmorth.

Parodd i mi ddyfod ato.

(a) Here the infin. may be considered as both the object of the finite verb, and as the verb of the noun or pronoun under government.

620. The Infinitive is often preceded by the preposition "i,"
to.

Daethym yma i weled Arthur. Dysgodd fi i ddarllen.
Ymroddodd i feddwi.

¹ *Hughes on "Syntax."*

(a) After some transitive verbs it is optional whether the prep. "i" comes between the finite verb and the noun (or pron.) or between the noun (or pron.) and the infinitive: thus we may say,

Dysgodd fi i ddarllen, or Dysgodd i mi ddarllen.

Cynghoraf chwi i ddyfod, or Cynghoraf i chwi ddyfod.

621. Observation on "i" before the Infinitive. The remark of some Grammarians, that "i is the sign of the Infin. mood, like 'to' in English," has a tendency to mislead the reader, as the former does not correspond to the latter except in certain cases.

622. a.) *I* is used before the Infinitive, when *motive* or *purpose* is to be expressed, (i. e. when the prep. can be converted into "*in order that*.")

Mi a droais i edrych==to see==that *I might see.*

Daethym yma i adrodd hanesyn==to relate an anecdote==that *I might relate an anecdote.*

β.) When the preceding verb is followed by a noun or pronoun in the accusative.

Cynghoraf chwi i ddyfod. Heriaf ef i ddadlu â mi.

623. a.) But *I* is not used when the Infinitive is the nom. to a verb, or an apposition nominative.

Rhoddi hanes am freninoedd yw bwriad y llyfr.

Bwriad y llyfr yw rhoddi hanes am freninoedd.

Eu harfer hwy ydyw ffrostio yn ddigywilydd.

Cael ei wasanaethu ef sydd yn anrhydedd.

Y mae yn anrhydedd cael ei wasanaethu ef.

β.) When the Infin. is the object to a verb.

Fe all Dafydd ddyfod. Gregorius a benderfynodd fyned.

Haeddodd ei gosbi. Haeddodd gael ei gosbi.

Ymgyniasom ysgrifenu yn eglur a diduedd. Tegid.

624. The following clauses (which will be explained more minutely hereafter) may have the Infin. as their principal verb.

Transitive. Gwelais fod Arthur yno.

Time. Aethym ymaith wedi gweled o honof Arthur.

Cause. O herwydd i Arthur ddyfod.

Motive. Daethym yma i weled Arthur.

Concessive. Er i Arthur ddyfod yma.

625. "When two or more verbs are coupled together, as dependent on the same conjunction, the first verb only will,

in Welsh, be put in the Conjunctive mood, and the *second* and following verbs will be used in their *radical* forms, [*i. e. the Infin.*] If the subject of the second and other verbs be different from that of the first, it will, if a noun, be connected with its verb by the preposition *o*, or, if a pronoun, by a proper pronominal inflexion of *o honof*=".

626. If the subject of the verb be not changed, the preposition with a noun or pron. may or may not be employed: if the subject be changed, it should for the sake of perspicuity be inserted.

a.) Subject not changed.

Fel y derbynier ef i arch Eglwys Crist, a *gallu o hono* fordwyo.
Com. Prayer.

Pan y'th ddygo yr Arglwydd dy Dduw . . . a *gyru o hono*. *Deut.* vii. 1.
Tra yr elwyf a *gweddio* acw. *Matt.* xxvi. 36.

Pan ddychwelo'r annuwiol . . . a *gwneuthur* barn. *Ezek.* xviii. 27.

b.) Subject changed.

Pan ddelych gyda ni, a *dyfod o'r daioni hwnw*. *Nam.* x. 32.

Od aeth neb o honoch ar gyfeiliorn . . . a *throi o rywun* ef.
James v. 19.

Os gwyrdd fy ngherddediad . . . a *myned o'm calon* ar ol fy llygaid.
Job xxxi. 7.

Pan ddelo trallod i gyfarfod â ni . . . a *pheri o gystudd i* ni deimlo.
Nicander.

627. Government. The Infinitive, if *immediately* followed by its object, governs it in the *radical* sound; but if an *intervenient word* or *phrase* separates the object from the infinitive, the object will be put in the *middle* sound.

Gwneuthur cyfiawnder. *Cashâu drygioni.*

Gwneuthur *o gydwylbod* gyfiawnder. *Cashâu mewn gwirionedd* ddrygioni.

. For further explanation, see §§. 550, 551, 552.

The Infinitive passive: see §. 567.

PARTICIPLES.

628. Participles have the same influence over their object as the infinitive verb has; that is, they govern the *radical* sound.

= *Hughes on "Syntax."*

629. The *present* participle is formed by prefixing *yn*, *gan*, or *dan* to the infinitive verb; the *past* by prefixing *wedi*, *ar ol*, or *yn ol*; and the *future* by prefixing *ar* or *ar fedr*.

The difference between yn, gan, and dan.

630. a. *Yn* with infinitive forms the participle employed in periphrastic verbs. In this circumstance *gan* and *dan* can never be used.

Y mae efe yn dysgu. Dafydd sydd yn myned.

β.) *Yn* with infin. may stand in apposition to a noun or pron. in any case.

Nom. { *Efe a fu yno | yn ei demtio gan Satan. Mark i. 13.*
Ni fedra Cymru | yn meddu deall cyffredin, byth gam-osod
yr acen. Tegid.

Gen. *Llef un | yn llefain yn y diffaethwch. Mark i. 3.*

Accus. { *Mi a glywais lef | yn dywedyd. Job iv. 16.*
Mewn pethau | yn perthyn i Dduw. Heb. ii. 17.

γ.) *Yn* with infin. is used in the case *absolute*.

A Duw yn cyd-dystiolaethu. Heb. ii. 4.
A hwy yn gweled, nid ydynt yn gweled.

631. a.) *Gan* (or *can*). "When the participle explains the act implied in another verb, *gan* is used."

Efe, gan ateb a ddywedodd.
Duw a orchymmynodd, gan ddywedyd.

β.) When intensity or certainty is to be expressed in past or future time, this is done by *gan* with infin., accompanied by the same verb in a finite mood.

Gan ddyfod y daw, nid oeda. Hab. ii. 3.

Gan fendithio y'th fendithiaf.

O gan bwyso na'phwysid fy nghofid. Job vi. 2.

Gan ddryllio yr ymddrylliodd y ddaiar, gan rwygo yr ymrwygodd y ddaiar, gan symmud yr ymsymmudodd y ddaiar. Is. xxiv. 19.

γ.) *Gan* with infin. is for the most part, if not always, set in apposition to a noun or pron. in the *nominative* case. Thus in the sentence, "*Yna y dyry y mab fodrwy i'r ferch, gan ei dodi ar y llyfr*," the participle *gan ei dodi* refers to *mab*, being the nominative, not to the word *ferch*, which is in the accusative.

* *Hughes on "Syntax."*

632. *Dan* (or *tan*) with infin. implies that an act is *continuous*, extending over the space of time occupied by the finite verb; and, like *gan*, it is set in apposition to the *nominative* case.

Dyna hi yn myned tan ganu. Tan yndyru ataf.
Bwyty dan chyrnau. Aeth ymaith dan feldithio.

633. The participle "*haring*" will be expressed in Welsh by *a* or *ag* (or *a*, *ac*) with an inflexion of *genyf* (or *cenyf*) = *with me*, or of *i mi* = *for me*.

Os yw neb yn ddiargyhoedd . . . a chanddo blant fyddlawn.
Titus i. 6.

Ag awr ganddynt. Job iii. 15. Dinas ac iddi sylfeini. Heb. xi. 10.

Pa fold yr oedd yn treulio ei amser, ac yntau heb lyfrau ganddo.
Nicander.

634. If an adverb intervene between the particle and the infinitive, the adverb will have its sound regulated by the particle, while the infinitive will be put in the *middle* sound.

Yn peraid ganu. Gan beraid ganu. Dan beraid ganu.
Wedi peraid ganu. Ar beraid ganu.

ADVERBS.

635. *Position.* Some adverbs will have one and only one place assigned to them in all sentences. *Adverbs of negation* immediately precede the negated word; as *Ni ddaeth yma*; *Nid yma y daeth*; *Nid efe a ddaeth*. *Adverbs of interrogation* begin the sentence; as *A ddaeth eich brawd*? *Sut y mae eich brawd*? *Adverbs of comparison* (except *iawn*) immediately precede the adjectives and adverbs modified by them; as *Tra doeth yw Arthur*. The *auxiliary affirmative adverbs* immediately precede finite verbs; *Efe a ddaeth*; *yn awr y daeth*.

636. But adverbs of *quality*, of *number*, of *order*, of *place*, of *time*, of *quantity*, and of *doubting*, will, in general, have their position determined by emphasis. 'They may either pre-

cede or follow the verb, the subject, and the object, or come between them. The words

“*Dos nesnes i'r cynnhesrwydd, i'r adail glêd rhed yn rhwydd*”

may also be expressed thus,

Nesnes dos i'r cynnhesrwydd, i'r adail gled yn rhwydd rhed.
Nesnes i'r cynnhesrwydd dos, rhed yn rhwydd i'r adail gled.
I'r cynnhesrwydd nesnes dos, rhed i'r adail gled yn rhwydd°.

The following classes of adverbs require a more detailed explanation.

Adverbs of negation.

637. The negative adverbs *ni, nid, nis, na, nad, nas, nac*, immediately precede the words to which they belong. They all negative *finite* verbs,—except *nid* and *nad*, which negative other words also.

638. The following are used before *finite* verbs, having *consonant* initials: *ni, nis, na, nas*.

639. *Ni* and *na* govern the *first* class of mutable consonants (*c, p, t*,) in the *aspirate*; the *second* (*g, b, d*,) and *third* (*ll, m, rh*,) in the *middle*. *Nis* and *nas* govern the *radical* of all classes.

- (1st cl.) *Ni char, ni phaid, ac ni thaw efe.*
- (2d cl.) *Ni ofala (rad. gofala,) ni feiddia, ac ni dlaw.*
- (3d cl.) *Ni leinw, ni feithrin, ac ni reola.*
Nis car, nis gofala, ac nis lleinw.

(a) The inflexions of the verb *bod* are, after *ni* and *na*, put sometimes in the *middle*, sometimes in the *radical*.

Ni fydd efe yno. Dywedodd na fu ei frawd yno.

Efe a weddiodd na byddai wlaw, ac ni bu gwlaw. James v. 17.

Ac ni fydd flin genym o'n rhan niinnau. Theo. Evans.

(b) The above example “*ni ofala*” requires explanation, *ni* being here used before a vowel. It was before remarked that the *omission* of the letter *g* is the sign of its *middle* sound, and as the next letter often happens to be a vowel, (as in the present example,) *ni* and *na*, which govern the *middle* sound, will accordingly be employed before a vowel. Some writers however considering this as a deviation from, rather than, as it really is, a strict adherence to rule, often employ *nid* and *nad* in such cases. (*Nid all efe ddyfod*.)

640. *Nid* and *nad* are placed before *finite* verbs with *vowel* initials; as

Nid aeth efe.

Dywed nad aeth efe.

° *Dr. Pughe's Grammar*, p. 122.

641. *Na* and *nac* are used (a) before Imperative verbs, (=μῆ, *ne*,) (b) in negative answers, *na* preceding a *consonant*, and *nac* a *vowel* initial. [*Na* has the same government as *ni* and *na* in §. 639.]

(a) *Na* ladd. *Nac* ofna.

(b) A ydyw Arthur yna? *Nac* ydyw.

642. The preceding rules regard *finite* verbs; but if the *infinitive* verb, or *any other part of speech*, be the negated term, *nid* and *nad* solely can be employed, which in this case may be followed by *consonants* as well as *vowels*, and will always require the *radical* sound after them.

Nid canu yr oedd.

Nid arwain y fyddin yr oedd.

Nid bardd yw.

Nid pwylllog yw.

Dywed *nad* yno y mae.

643. *Ni*, *nid*, *nis*, (=οὐ, *non*, *not*,) head *main clauses*, and are followed by the *Indicative* mood.

Ni ddaeth fy nghyfaill. *Nid aeth* fy nghyfaill. *Nis daeth* fy nghyfaill.

644. *Na*, *nad*, *nas*, (=μή, *ne*, *that not*,) head *subjoined clauses*, and are followed by the *Subjunctive* mood in some, and by the *Indicative* in other, clauses. [See *Supposition*, *Effect*, and *Relative clauses*.]

Gwethiais, fel *na phwyswn* arnoch.

Os *nad* yw yn dyfod.

645. Double negatives do not destroy one another, as they do in English. [In this, the Welsh resembles the Greek.]

Nid oes na chaeth na rhydd. *Ni chaf na* gloes na drygfyd.

Heb na rhuthro i mewn na rhedeg allan.

Yn yr hwn *ni* ddodlasid *neb* erioed. *Luke* xxlii. 53. [Gr. οὐ οὐκ ὄν οὐδέτερον ὀδέσας.]

646. "The adverbs *dim* and *mo* are used as a species of auxiliaries to other negatives; and sometimes both may occur together in the same sentences^p."

Ni ddaw Dafydd *ddim* yma.

Yr hwn *nid* adnabuasai *mo* Ioseph. *Ex.* i. 8.

Ni fedrant ganfod *mo* ddichellion dynion. *Edw. Samuel.*

Ni wiw i ti *ddim* *mo* son am hyny.

^p *Dr. Pugh's Grammar.*

(a) '*Dim* and *mo*, when auxiliary adverbs, will always follow the verb. Their force is nearly equivalent to the English *at all*.'

(b) *Mo* is a contraction of *dim o=nothing of*. When followed by the pron. *honof* or any of its inflexions, *mo* and the pron. often coalesce into one word: thus,

Mo'nof= <i>mo honof</i> .	Mo'nom= <i>mo honom</i> .
Mo'not= <i>mo honot</i> .	Mo'noch= <i>mo honoch</i> .
{ Mo'no= <i>mo hono</i> .	Mo'nynt= <i>mo honynt</i> .
{ Mo'ni= <i>mo honi</i> .	

Adverbs of comparison.

647. *Cyn, can, gan, digon, go, lled, mor, pur, rhy, tra, and iawn*, qualify adjectives and other adverbs; and all, except *iawn*, precede the words qualified by them. *Iawn* follows.

Tra governs the *first* class of mutable consonants in the *aspirate*; the *second* and *third* in the *radical*; *digon* governs the *radical*. The others govern the *middle* sound.

Tra chryf; tra phur; tra theg. Tra gwyn, &c. Digon cryf.

Cyn gryfed; go bur; lled deg; rhy wyn, &c.

(a) *Cyn, mor, and pur*, may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*.

Cyn loned or lloned. Cyn rwydded or rhwydded.

Mor lon or llon. Mor rwydd or rhwydd.

Pur lon or llon. Pur rwydd or rhwydd.

648. When they qualify adverbs, compounded of *yn* with an adjective (*e. g. yn ddoeth*), they will be placed between *yn* and the adjective; as

Llefarodd yn bur ddoeth. Bucheddodd yn dra rhinweddol.

(a) But *cyn* and *mor* dismiss the particle *yn*; as

Llefarodd cyn ddoethed. Llefarodd mor ddoeth.

649. **Adverbs of quality** (which are formed by prefixing *yn adverbial* to a common adjective, see §. 320.) when they begin a sentence, generally throw off *yn*, and assume the *radical* sound. Thus, instead of saying '*yn gywir yr ateb-aist*,' we usually say '*cywir yr ateb-aist*.'

650. Adverbs of this character, if they *immediately* precede the words modified by them, require the *middle* sound after them; as

Awyddus ddysgwyliais am eich gweled.

Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.

651. The particles of affirmation, called by the old

grammarian *Edeyrn* "rhagweision berfau," are *a*, *y*, *yr*, and formerly *yd* and *ydd*. They immediately precede *finite* verbs in affirmative sentences.

652. *A* is a mere expletive, and has no equivalent in English¹.

653. It is placed immediately before the verb, when the subject or the object goes before the verb. [If the verb precede, the particle is not employed.]

Subject preceding. Duw *a* greodd y byd. Y doeth *a* wrendy.

Efe *a* gyfrifir yn ddysgedig Duw pob gras *a*'ch perffeithio chwi.

Object preceding. Yr us *a* lysg efe. Yr hwn *a* darewaist ti.

Ammau *a* wnaethant.

Verb preceding. Creodd Duw y byd. Cyfrifir ef yn ddysgedig.

(a) When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs, (see §. 556, &c.) and are preceded by *a*, they are written thus,

Sing. *A*'m=*a* *ym*.

A'th=*a* *yth*.

A'i=*a* *ei*.

Pl. *A*'n=*a* *ein*.

A'ch=*a* *eich*.

A'u=*a* *eu*.

654. The present Indic. of *bod*, and the imperfect tense *oeddw*, &c. do not require the particle when the subject precedes.

Myfi *wyf* yn rhedeg. Arthur *oedd* yno.

Dyn *sydd* debyg i wagedd.

(a) But the particle *y* is sometimes found before *sydd*.

Bywyd y byd *y* sydd ar ddyfod. *Com. Prayer.*

Gan fy nghas *y* sydd o'm cwmipas innau. *Edm. Prys.*

655. If, in conjoined clauses, *a* occurs in the first, it will be repeated in the clauses that follow, unless the order of construction be changed.

Ni *a* awn i gyfryw ddinas, ac *a* aroswn, ac *a* farchnatawn ac *a* ynuillwn. *James* iv. 13.

(a) If however the particle does not occur in the first clause, it is questionable whether it may be properly inserted in the second, unless the subject or object precede it. The sentence "Gwrendy eu llefain ac *a*'u hachub hwynt," would, in the opinion of some good critics, be more correctly expressed thus; "Gwrendy eu llefain ac achub hwynt;" or "Gwrendy eu llefain ac *efe* *a*'u hachub hwynt."

¹ It is a most erroneous observation, made even by the learned *Tegid*, that *a*, as a verbal agent, corresponds to *will* and *did* in English. (*Defence of Welsh Orthography*, p. 17.)

656. When the auxiliary pronouns *fe, fo, e, o*, are placed before verbs, *a* may or may not be employed.

Fe a gosbir y dyn; or fe gosbir y dyn.

Fe a'm tarawodd â chareg; or fe'm tarawodd â chareg.

657. In a sentence, where the verb is negatived, *a* is dispensed with; but if the subject or object be the negatived term, then *a* is employed.

Verb negatived. Yr hwn ni ddel. (*Aff.* Yr hwn *a* ddel.)

Subject negatived. Nid hwn *a* ddel, ond arall.

Object negatived. Nid yr us *a* lysg efe â thân.

658. *A* is put before vowel and consonant initials, and is followed by the *middle* sound; as

Arthur *a* aeth ymaith. Arthur *a* ddaeth yma.

659. As *a* is a mere expletive, it is very often omitted; but the verb still takes the *middle* sound.

Nos daenodd dros ei lygaid. *D. S. Evans.*

Arthur fu yn filwr dewr.

(a) But when in a relative clause the relative heading is omitted, *a* is then almost invariably inserted.

Gwelais y dyn *a* laddwyd. Gwelais y dyn *a* laddasant.

660. *Y* and *yr* (formerly *yd* and *ydd*) are used when the preceding words are emphatic or antithetical. They are often equivalent to the English phrase "*it is*."

661. *Yr* is put before a *vowel*; *y* before a *consonant*, and governs the *radical* sound; *ydd* before a *vowel*; *yd* before a *consonant*, and governs the *middle*.

Hwyr *yr* crys Duw cyn taro,

Llwyr *y* dial pan y delo.

Cyflym *ydd a* rym yr oes. *Gor. Owen.*

Basaf dwfr man *yd* lefair. *Adage.*

(a) The oldest forms of these particles seem to be *yd* and *ydd* (=Lat. *id*. Eng. *it*), which are probably old pronouns standing as nominative to a suppressed inflexion of *bod*; such as *yw* or *ys*. If this conjecture be right, the meaning now assigned to them is etymologically correct. (*Ydd ys=id est=it is*.)

662. It has been remarked that *a* is used when the subject or the object of the verb precedes it (§. 653.): *y* and *yr*, on the contrary, should be employed when the subject and object follow the verb, but some other part of the sentence precedes it; such as,

663. α.) *A preposition with its case.*

Yn y ddeirnod y creodd Daw y nefoedd. Arno yntau y blodeus ei geron.

I gredh yr hyn y gorfodir fi.

(α) The participial signs *yn*, *gan*, and *dan*, are regarded here as prepositions: hence if they with their case precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn darllen y bum. Dan gannu yr aeth.

Yn is most generally omitted, yet *y* is still used. *Darllen y bum.*

(β) 'Yn apposition' also is regarded as a preposition: hence if it, expressed or understood, precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn ôl y cawron y gwr hwn. Dysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur.

But if *yn* be omitted before certain tenses of *bod*, *a* will be used. [See below.]

664. In relative and interrogative clauses the prep. is frequently placed after the verb, the governed word occupying the first place; but the particle will still precede the verb, independently of the position assigned to the preposition.

Y wlad yr hon y'm ganed ynddi. Yr hon y mae y mab ganddo.

Beth y gorfodir fi i'r gredh?

Pu beth y daethoch i ymoraw am dano?

(α) The rel. heading is often omitted, and sometimes the prep. also.

Y wlad yr hon y daethoch allan o honi.

Yn y dydd yn yr hwn y gwnaeth yr Arglwydd y ddaiar.

Ym mhob cyflwr yr hwn y byddom [ynddo].

(β) The prep. is usually omitted before words signifying duration or part of time, space, &c.

Llawer gwaith y'm cystuddiwyd. Wythnos yr arosais.

665. β.) *An adverb or an adverbial phrase.*

Yma y daeth. Yno yr aeth. Toc y darfyddodd.

Echduw y gwelais ef. Ebrwydd yr aeth ymaith.

(α) When the adverb is not emphatic, the particle may in most cases be left out.

Emphatic. Yno y bum innau. Simple. Yno bum innau.

666. γ.) *A conjunction; such as,*

Fel, mal, fal, megys, modd; nag; pryd, prydbynag, nes, hyd, hyd nes; ag and its compounds *cyhyd ag, cyn gynted ag, &c.*

Fel y bernid hwy. Modd y delom o'r diwedd.

Bum yn hapusach nag y byddaf. Pryd yr atebodd.

Hyd nes y daeth. Cyhyd ag yr crys.

(a) *Pan*, *tra*, and *pe*, may or may not be followed by *y*. Occasionally it is found after *os*.

Pan y'm cerydder. Pan ddaeth fy mrawd.

(b) When *y* is put after conjunctions, its antithetical force (=it is) is scarcely, if at all, discernible.

667. δ) *A word in the possessive case.* *Y* is used in a relative clause where the possessive precedes, and the nominative follows the verb. [See §. 819.]

Y rhai y llefara eu genau wagodd. Y rhai yr oedd Daniel yn benaf o honynt.

668. ε) When a subjoined clause precedes the main one, the particle is sometimes found before the verb of the latter.

Ac wedi iddynt ei fflangellu, y lladdant ef. Luke xviii. 33.

Pan ddaeth cyflawnder yr amser, y danfonodd Duw Ei fab. Gal. iv. 4.

669. But if the subject precede the verb, the particle *a* should be employed even though other words precede.

Yn hyn Ioan a ragorodd.

670. In conjoined sentences, if *y* occurs in the first, it will be repeated in the following clauses, unless the order be changed.

Fel y bernid hwy . . . ac y byddent fyw. 1 Peter iv. 6.

671. In an Imperative clause, or in a negative where the verb is negated, *y* is never employed, notwithstanding other words precede.

Imper. Yna gwybyddwch.

Neg. Yma ni ddaw eich brawd. (Pos. Yma y daw eich brawd.)

672. When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs, and are preceded by *y*, they are thus written :

Sing. *Y'm=y ym.*

Y'th=y yth.

Y'i=y ei.

Pl. *Y'n=y ein.*

Y'ch=y eich.

Y'u=y eu.

673. *Inflections of bod.* If '*yn apposition*' be omitted before a predicative noun or adjective, the tenses of *bod* (except pres., and imperf. *oeddw*, &c.) will be preceded by *a*; as

Bendigedig a fyddo 'r Arglwydd. Brenin a fum.

674. The pres. and imperf. *oeddw*, &c. will admit of no particle; as

Gweddus yw mawl. Brenin oedd y gwr.

675. But if the pres. and imperf. *oeddw* &c. begin the sentence, they will be preceded by *y* or *yr*.

Yr wyf yn myned. Yr oeddw yn myned.

With these exceptions, and that mentioned in §. 654. the tenses of *bod* will be preceded by *a* and *y*, like other verbs.

Adverbs of Interrogation. (See *Interrogative clause*, §. 767, &c.)

CONJUNCTIONS.

676. Most conjunctions stand at the beginning of the sentences to which they belong; but some, as in other languages, may occupy any other place.

677. "Some of the conjunctions have merely a literal difference, to afford means of avoiding every hiatus and discordant sound^r." These are *a*, *ac*=and; *a*, *ag*=as; *na*, *nac*=nor; *na*, *nag* (and formerly *no*, *nog*)=than; and also the conditional conjunctions, *o*, *od*; *pe*, *ped*; *oni*, *onid*.

678. *A*, and, as; *na*, nor, than; and *no*, than, precede words with *consonant* initials; and govern the *first* class in the *aspirate*; the *second* and *third* in the *radical*.

(1st.) *Bara a chaws*; *cyn goched a than*; *nid oes genyf nac arian na phres*.

(2d and 3d.) *Bara a gwin*; *gwell na bywyd*.

Gwell no gwen y wawr i mi. D. S. Evans.

679. *Ac*, and; *ag*, as; *noc*, nor; *nag* and *nog*, than; precede words with *vowel* initials.

Aur ac arian. Y mae mor enwog ag unrhyw wlad.

(a) But before certain words,—chiefly adverbs, prepositions and other conjunctions beginning with *f*, *h*, *m*, or *n*, the forms *ac*, *nac*, &c. are usually preferred to *a*, *na*, &c.

Ac fe ddaw. Ac fel hyn. Ac megys. Ac nid. Ac hefyd.

(b) The Inf. *bod*, when implying 'that . . . is,' and *darfod*= 'that . . . has,' have the twofold construction of *a bod* and *ac fod*; *a darfod* and *ac ddarfod*.

^r *Dr. Pughe's Grammar.*

680. The disjunctive *neu*, nor, governs the *middle* sound; *ynte*, or, *ai*, or, and its compounds *naill ai*, *un ai*, &c. govern the *radical*.

Dyn *neu* ddynes. *Naill ai* dyn *ynte* dynes.

681. The adversatives *ond*, *onid*, *eithr*, *oddi eithr*, *oddi gerth*, *namyn*, and *heb law*, when followed by mutable consonants, govern the *radical* sound.

Nid oes genyf *ond* ceisio. Nid yw efe *ond* dyn.

(a) But when they are followed by an Infin. equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb*, (e. g. Gwn ei *fod* yno, *I know that he is there*,) the initial of the verb may or may not be softened. This is especially the case with *bod*, to be, and *darfod*, to have done.

Nis gwn ddim *ond fod* Arthur yno: or Nis gwn ddim *ond bod* Arthur yno.

Nis gwn ddim *ond ddarfod* iddo ddweyd; or Nis gwn ddim *ond darfod* iddo ddweyd.

☞ The conjunctions which introduce *supposition*, *concession*, *cause*, *motive*, *effect*, *transitive* and *time clauses*, will be treated of hereafter.

682. Some conjunctions and adverbs have other conjunctions corresponding to them in the same or in the following sentence: such as

Fel	{ ... felly = as ... so.	Pa un a, or ai	{ ai, neu, or ynte = whether ... or.
Megys		Pa un bynag	
Er ... eto, or er hyny = although ... yet.		a, or ai	
Mor	{ ... a or ag = as ... as.	(a) A is placed before <i>finite verbs</i> ; <i>ai</i> under all other circumstances.	
Cyn			
Mor, cyn ... fel = so ... that.			
Naill ai ... ai, neu, or ynte = either ... or.			

PREPOSITIONS.

683. Prepositions are in Welsh, as in English, placed before the words to which they refer. *Mewn* tref. *Ger llaw'r* bryn.

684. Prepositions govern different sounds, some taking after them the *radical*, some the *middle*, some few the *aspirate*, and *yn* the *nasal*. [In §. 338—349, the reader

will find these arranged under different heads, according to the sounds which they respectively govern.]

(a) It may be expedient here to caution the reader against an erroneous observation made by several grammarians, that 'the middle sound comes after *all* prepositions, except *yn*, *in*, and *tua*, towards.'

685. *Mewn*, and *yn*, *in*.

Mewn is placed before *indefinitive* words.

Mewn llyfr, *in a book.* *Mewn* ty, *in a house.*

Yn is placed before *definitive* words; i. e. the definite article, whether expressed or virtually implied in another word.

a) *The article expressed.*

Yn y llyfr, *in the book.* *Yn* y ty, *in the house.*

b) *Proper names.*

Yn Llundain. *Yn* Nafydd. *Ym* Mon.

c) *The personal, possessive, and demonstrative pronouns.*

*Yn*of fi. *Yn* fy nhy. *Yn* hyny.

d) *A noun governing another in the possessive case.*

Ym mhen y ffordd. *Yn* nhy fy nhad.

(a) Here '*mhen*' and '*nhad*' are virtually definitive, according to §. 380.: hence they are preceded by *yn*, not *mewn*. If, however, the preceding noun is not definitive, *mewn* will be employed.

Mewn heddwch meddwl.

Mewn dinas wagedd.

e) *The words pob, pawb, pwy, pa, holl, and some others.*

Ym mhob man. *Ym* mhawb. *Ym* mhwy.

Ym mha ardal y bydd fy lletty.

(a) *Yn* is also placed before some indefinite words to form compound propositions.

Ym mron. *Yng* ngwydd. *Yng* nghyda.

Ym mhlith. *Yn* lle. *Yn* ymyl.

(b) In the words '*Ym* *mhell*' *yn* preposition is used for *yn* apposition; and, on the contrary, *yn* apposition is put for *yn* preposition in '*yn* *Gymraeg*.'

686. Some writers change '*yn* preposition' into *ym* before *m* and *mh*; and into *yg* before *ng* and *ngh*. Others deny the propriety of this change, and write *yn* under all circumstances.

Ym mhen yr heol; or *Yn* mhen yr heol.

Yna Nghaersalem; or *Yn* Nghaersalem.

(a) Many join the preposition to the following word; as *y'mron, y'ngŵydd*; but this creates an unnecessary exception to the rules of accentuation. [See §. 85. (b.)]

687. It may be convenient here to repeat the different functions of *yn* with illustrations to shew its force and government in each place.

a. '*Yn participial*' is placed before the Infin. mood to form a participle, and is followed by the *radical* sound.

Yn dysgu. Yn cerdded. Yn parhau.

β. '*Yn apposition*' is placed before a noun or adjective, to set it in apposition with a preceding word, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Y mae Arthur yn frenin. Y mae Arthur yn ddewr.

γ. '*Yn adverbial*' is placed before an adjective to convert it into an adverb, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Ysgrifena yn gampus. Darllena yn wych.

δ. '*Yn preposition*' is placed before a substantive, adjective, or pronoun, and is followed by the *nasal* sound.

Yn nhŷ fy nhad. Ym mhob ty. Yng ngharchar.

688. A (or ag) and gan. *A* and *ag* correspond to *with*, denoting the instrument; *gan* corresponds to *by*, denoting the agent.

Tarawyd ef â chareg gan Arthur.

689. At and i. *At*=to, towards, denotes *proximity*; *i*=to within, into, to.

Dos at dy frawd. Dos i'th dy.

690. Erbyn, yn erbyn, i..erbyn. *Erbyn*=against or by, refers to *time*; *yn erbyn*=against or contrary to, denotes *opposition*; *i..erbyn* has the same meaning as *yn erbyn*, but is used only when the object is a *pronoun*.

Bydd yn barod erbyn dydd Iau.

Ymladdodd yn fy erbyn. Ymladdodd yn erbyn Arthur.

Ymladdodd i'm herbyn.

694. Cer, ger, by; cerfydd, gerfydd, by; cwedi, gwedi, after; cyda, gyda, with; can, gan, by. The strong form *cer, cerfydd, cwedi, &c.* occurs after *a*, (and, as,) and *na*,

ger. llaw : in other circumstances the lighter form *ger*, *gerbydd*, &c. is generally preferred.

A ger llaw ian y safodd. Safodd ger llaw iddo.

A gerbydd ian y safodd. Safodd gerbydd ian.

692. *Tro. traw. trawr* : *traws. draws, across; trwy, drwy, through.* The strong form *traw, traws, trwy*, &c. is put after *a*, and *ar* : in other circumstances it is immaterial whether we employ this or the other lighter form, *dan, drann, drwy*, &c.

A dan y môr yr aeth. *A thrwy y môr yr aeth.*

Dan ar dan y môr y mar. *Aeth drwy ar trwy y môr.*

693. *Time and distance of place.* Before nouns of time and distance of place the prepositions are sometimes expressed, but most frequently omitted. Nouns signifying point of time are preceded by *ar*, upon; those which signify duration of time or distance of place, take *am*, for, or *traw, over*.

<i>Yr awdwr yno</i>	{ <i>ar ddydd llun, or</i> <i>dydd llun</i>	<i>Cerddais</i>	{ <i>am flitir, or</i> <i>flitir.</i>
<i>Gwladfa</i>	{ <i>am ddiwrnod, or</i> <i>ddiwrnod.</i>		

694. *Compound prepositions.* By referring to §. 346, &c. the reader will perceive that the compound prepositions are formed by putting in apposition two or more simple prepositions; or by the use of a substantive under government. Thus *oddi ar* is a compound, formed of the two simple prepositions *oddi* and *ar*. *Ger llaw* is another compound, formed of the simple prep. *ger*, and the substantive *llaw*, under government of *ger*.

(a) Those compounds which borrow a substantive to form them are, of course, only assumed as such; for (e. g.) *ger llaw* is strictly a phrase, signifying *near the hand*, and may be dealt with as such.

695. The difference between *the being upon* or *near*, and *the being in*, is carefully marked by means of compound prepositions. Thus the prep. 'from' will be expressed in Welsh by *o, oddi ar, or oddi wrth*, according as "from" may imply *out of, from upon, or from besides*.

Tynodd yr haiarn o'r tan.

Cymmerodd y gyllell oddi ar y bwrdd.

Dychwelodd oddi wrth ei gyfaill.

696. When '*compound prepositions ending with a substantive*' (§. 349.) precede personal pronouns, a corresponding possessive will intervene between the component parts of the prepositions.

Ar ol: *ar fy ol i*; *ar dy ol di*; *ar ei ol ef*.

(a) Unless the phrase is emphatic, the pers. pron. may be left out; the possessive being thought sufficient to convey the meaning.

Ar fy ol; *ar dy ol*; *ar ei ol*.

697. The prep. *is law*, *ger llaw*, *uwch law*, and *oddi amgylch*, usually take *i* after them.

Is law: *is law i mi*; *is law i ti*; *is law iddo ef*.

(a) *Heb law* is an exception, as it neither takes *i* nor the possessive. (*Ni ddaeth yma neb heb law chwi*.) In some instances, however, we find the pronouns inserted. *Arglwyddi ereill heb dy law di*. *Is. xxvi. 13*.

698. When the object of the prep. is a *substantive*, such compounds as take *i* after them when followed by pronouns, may or may not retain it when followed by substantives; but those, which use the poss. when the object is a pron., will, of course, dismiss it before a substantive.

Is law i'r afon; or *Is law yr afon*.

Ar ol dyddiau lawer. *O flaen y brenin*.

699. **Pronominal prepositions** are a class of compound words, formed by suffixing a personal pron. to a preposition. [See §. 350—357.] They will be rendered into English by a prep. and a pron. in the objective case.

Dos ato, go to him. *Pwysa arno*, press upon it.

(a) When the object of the prep. is a noun, the pronominal inflexion will of course be dismissed.

Dos at y dyn, go to the man. *Pwysa ar y gareg*, press upon the stone.

700. When the pron. requires to be expressed with a degree of emphasis, it is repeated after the pronominal preposition.

<i>Simple.</i>		<i>Emphatic.</i>	
Ataf.	Atom.	Ataf <i>fi</i> .	Atom <i>ni</i> .
Atat.	Atoch.	Atat <i>ti</i> .	Atoch <i>chwi</i> .
{ Ato.	Atynt.	{ Ato <i>ef</i> or <i>fe</i> .	Atynt <i>hwy</i> .
{ Ati.		{ Ati <i>hi</i> .	

INTERJECTIONS.

701. When an interjection is placed before a noun, adjective, or pronoun, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

O dad! O *drugarog* dad! Och *fi*!

Wels *bedwar* bwystfil yn ymryson. *Dan.* vii. 5.

702. When the interjection is omitted, the noun or adj. under its government is most usually put in the *middle* sound; but sometimes retains its *radical* initial:

Mid. { *Olygydd hynaws*; *garedig gyfaill*.
Barchedig syr; *drugarog Dad*.

Rad. *Duw* dad, o'r nef, *trugarha* wrthym.

703. When an interjection intervenes between a verb and its subject or object, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

Nid yw efe yn gallu, *ow*! *dal*u dim.

704. When it stands before a *finite* verb, the verb retains its *radical* sound; as

O! *tyred* yma. Och! *paid* â'm lladd.

CLAUSES.

705. Clauses are divided into *main* (or *principal*) and *subjoined*.

706. 'The *main clause* is that which contains the leading proposition; and it must express a complete idea, even when separated from the rest of the sentence.'

He will not be pardoned, unless he repent.

He would not be pardoned, unless he repented.

Pardon him. *May he be pardoned.*

707. 'A *subjoined clause* is a simple sentence, or part of a sentence, modifying the main clause.'

Arthur says *that he has learnt his lesson*.

Arthur shall have a penny, *because he has learnt his lesson*.

Arthur shall have a penny, *if he will learn his lesson*.

TRANSITIVE CLAUSE.

708. The *Transitive Clause* comes after words significative of *affirmation*, *sense*, and *mental operations*; as *saying*, *seeing*, *hearing*, *feeling*, *knowing*, *thinking*, &c. In

English it is introduced by the conjunction *that*, and the late *Kerchever Arnold* defines it as, "A sentence that stands in apposition to a nominative or accusative, expressed or understood, in the principal sentence.

It is strange *that you think so*. Here the clause *that you think so* is in apposition to *it*; i. e. *this thing*.

I am glad *that you are come*—I am glad of *this*; namely, *that you are come*."

709. In Welsh this clause is expressed (*a*) in *positive* sentences, by the *Infinitive* mood, or by the conj. *y* (*yr*), *mai* or *taw*, with *finite* moods: (*b*) in *negative* sentences, by *finite* moods. The particles of negation in Transitive clauses are *na*, *nad*, and *nas*, except in connection with *mai* (or *taw*), which, if retained, is followed by *ni*, *nid*, or *nis*.

710. **The Infinitive mood.** This construction is used in simple narration, or when the emphasis, if any, falls on the verb of the Clause.

711. **A. The Infinitive mood followed by its subject.** This construction occurs when the verb is *bod*, either as main or auxiliary, and when it simply declares a thing; i. e. when it is equivalent to a verb in the Indicative mood. The tenses of the Indic. which will admit of this form in subordinate sentences are the following.

Indicative.

Pres. Yr wyf yn dysgu.
Imperf. Yr oeddwn yn dysgu.
Perf. def. Yr wyf wedi dysgu.
Plup. Yr oeddwn wedi dysgu.

Infinitive.

Dywed fy mod i yn dysgu.
Dywedai fy mod i yn dysgu.
Dywed fy mod i wedi dysgu.
Dywedodd fy mod i wedi dysgu.

Additional examples. Ac os bwriwn at hyn eu bod hwy yn ddigon cydnabyddus â'r pethau. *Edw. Samuel.* Harddwch yr iaith yw bod ei geiriau yn dangaws eu defnydd cyssefin. *Dr. Pughe.* Ymddengys bod yr ysgrythyrau wedi myned yn dra phrinion. *W. Davies.* Wrth weled fod ei holl feddwol ar y byd a ddaw. *Nicander.*

(*a*) If the subject be a pronoun, it may be omitted; but it is always represented by a corresponding possessive immediately preceding the verb. (Gwyr fy mod yn dyfod.)

663. a.) *A preposition with its case.*

Yn y dechreuad y creodd Duw y nefoedd. Arno yntau y blodeus ei goron.

I gredu yr hyn y gorfodir fi.

(a) The participial signs *yn*, *gan*, and *dan*, are regarded here as prepositions: hence if they with their case precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn darllen y bum. Dan ganu yr aeth.

Yn is most generally omitted, yet *y* is still used. *Darllen y bum.*

(b) '*Yn apposition*' also is regarded as a preposition: hence if it, expressed or understood, precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn bla y cawsom y gwr hwn. Dysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur.

But if *yn* be omitted before certain tenses of *bod*, *a* will be used. [See below.]

664. In relative and interrogative clauses the prep. is frequently placed after the verb, the governed word occupying the first place; but the particle will still precede the verb, independently of the position assigned to the preposition.

Y wlad yr hon y'm ganed ynddi. Yr hwn y mae y mab ganddo.

Beth y gorfodir fi i'io gredu?

Pa beth y daethoch i ymorallw am dano?

(a) The rel. heading is often omitted, and sometimes the prep. also.

Y wlad [yr hon] y daethost allan o honi.

Yn y dydd [yn yr hwn] y gwnaeth yr Arglwydd y ddaiar.

Ym mhob cyflwr [yr hwn] y byddom [ynddo].

(b) The prep. is usually omitted before words signifying duration or part of time, space, &c.

Llawer gwaith y'm cystuddiwyd. Wythnos yr arosais.

665. β.) *An adverb or an adverbial phrase.*

Yma y daeth. Yno yr aeth. Toc y darfyddodd.

Echduw y gwelais ef. Ebrwydd yr aeth ymaith.

(a) When the adverb is not emphatic, the particle may in most cases be left out.

Emphatic. Yno y bum innau. Simple. Yno bum innau.

666. γ.) *A conjunction; such as,*

Fel, mal, fal, megys, modd; nag; pryd, prydbynag, nes, hyd, hyd nes; ag and its compounds *cyhyd ag, cyn gynted ag, &c.*

Fel y bernid hwy. Modd y delom o'r diwedd.

Bum yn hapusach nag y byddaf. Pryd yr atebodd.

Hyd nes y daeth. Cyhyd ag yr erys.

(a) *Pan*, *tra*, and *pe*, may or may not be followed by *y*. Occasionally it is found after *os*.

Pan y'm cerydder. Pan ddaeth fy mrawd.

(b) When *y* is put after conjunctions, its antithetical force (=it is) is scarcely, if at all, discernible.

667. δ) *A word in the possessive case.* *Y* is used in a relative clause where the possessive precedes, and the nominative follows the verb. [See §. 819.]

Y rhai y llefara eu genau wagedd. Y rhai yr oedd Daniel yn benaf o honynt.

668. ε) When a subjoined clause precedes the main one, the particle is sometimes found before the verb of the latter.

Ac wedi iddynt ei fflangellu, y lladdant ef. Luke xviii. 33.

Pan ddaeth cyflawnder yr amser, y danfonodd Duw Ei fab. Gal. iv. 4.

669. But if the subject precede the verb, the particle *a* should be employed even though other words precede.

Yn hyn Ioan a ragorodd.

670. In conjoined sentences, if *y* occurs in the first, it will be repeated in the following clauses, unless the order be changed.

Fel y bernid hwy . . . ac y byddent fyw. 1 Peter iv. 6.

671. In an Imperative clause, or in a negative where the verb is negated, *y* is never employed, notwithstanding other words precede.

Imper. Yna gwyhyddwch.

Neg. Yma ni ddaw eich brawd. (Pos. Yma y daw eich brawd.)

672. When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs, and are preceded by *y*, they are thus written :

Sing. *Y'm=y ym.*

Y'th=y yth.

Y'i=y ei.

Pl. *Y'n=y ein.*

Y'ch=y eich.

Y'u=y eu.

673, *Inflections of bod.* If '*yn apposition*' be omitted before a predicative noun or adjective, the tenses of *bod* (except pres., and imperf. *oeddwn*, &c.) will be preceded by *a*; as

Bendigedig a fyddo 'r Arglwydd. Brenin a fum.

674. The pres. and imperf. *oeddw'n*, &c. will admit of no particle; as

Gweddus yw mawl. Brenin oedd y gwr.

675. But if the pres. and imperf. *oeddw'n* &c. begin the sentence, they will be preceded by *y* or *yr*.

Yr wyf yn myned. Yr oeddw'n yn myned.

With these exceptions, and that mentioned in §. 654. the tenses of *bod* will be preceded by *a* and *y*, like other verbs.

Adverbs of Interrogation. (See *Interrogative clause*, §. 767, &c.)

CONJUNCTIONS.

676. Most conjunctions stand at the beginning of the sentences to which they belong; but some, as in other languages, may occupy any other place.

677. "Some of the conjunctions have merely a literal difference, to afford means of avoiding every hiatus and discordant sound". These are *a*, *ac*=and; *a*, *ag*=as; *na*, *nac*=nor; *na*, *nag* (and formerly *no*, *nog*)=than; and also the conditional conjunctions, *o*, *od*; *pe*, *ped*; *oni*, *onid*.

678. *A*, and, as; *na*, nor, than; and *no*, than, precede words with *consonant* initials; and govern the *first* class in the *aspirate*; the *second* and *third* in the *radical*.

(1st.) *Bara a chaws*; *cyn goched a than*; *nid oes genyf nac arian na phres*.

(2d and 3d.) *Bara a gwin*; *gwell na bywyd*.
Gwell no gwen y wawr i mi. *D. S. Evans.*

679. *Ac*, and; *ag*, as; *noc*, nor; *nag* and *nog*, than; precede words with *vowel* initials.

Aur ac arian. *Y mae mor enwog ag unrhyw wlad.*

(a) But before certain words,—chiefly adverbs, prepositions and other conjunctions beginning with *f*, *h*, *m*, or *n*, the forms *ac*, *nac*, &c. are usually preferred to *a*, *na*, &c.

Ac fe ddaw. *Ac fel hyn.* *Ac megys.* *Ac nid.* *Ac hefyd.*

(b) The Infin. *bod*, when implying '*that . . . is*,' and *darfod*= '*that . . . has*,' have the twofold construction of *a bod* and *ac fod*; *a darfod* and *ac ddarfod*.

¹ *Dr. Pughe's Grammar.*

680. The disjunctive *neu*, nor, governs the *middle* sound; *ynte*, or, *ai*, or, and its compounds *naill ai*, *un ai*, &c. govern the *radical*.

Dyn neu ddynes. Naill ai dyn ynte dynes.

681. The adversatives *ond*, *onid*, *eithr*, *oddi eithr*, *oddi gerth*, *namyn*, and *heb law*, when followed by mutable consonants, govern the *radical* sound.

Nid oes genyf ond ceisio. Nid yw efe ond dyn.

(a) But when they are followed by an Infin. equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb*, (e. g. *Gwn ei fod yno, I know that he is there*), the initial of the verb may or may not be softened. This is especially the case with *bod*, to be, and *darfod*, to have done.

Nis gwn ddim ond fod Arthur yno: or Nis gwn ddim ond bod Arthur yno.

Nis gwn ddim ond ddarfod iddo ddweyd; or Nis gwn ddim ond darfod iddo ddweyd.

☞ The conjunctions which introduce *supposition*, *concession*, *cause*, *motive*, *effect*, *transitive* and *time clauses*, will be treated of hereafter.

682. Some conjunctions and adverbs have other conjunctions corresponding to them in the same or in the following sentence: such as

Fel } ... felly = *as* ... *so*.

Megys }

Er ... eto, or er hyny = *although* ... *yet*.

Mor } ... a or ag = *as* ... *as*.

Cyn }

Mor, cyn ... fel = *so* ... *that*.

Naill ai ... ai, neu, or ynte
= *either* ... *or*.

Pa un a, or ai

Pa un bynag

a, or ai

(a) *A* is placed before *finite verbs*; *ai* under all other circumstances.

ai, neu, or
ynte = *whether* ... *or*.

PREPOSITIONS.

683. Prepositions are in Welsh, as in English, placed before the words to which they refer. *Mewn tref. Ger llaw'r bryn.*

684. Prepositions govern different sounds, some taking after them the *radical*, some the *middle*, some few the *aspirate*, and *yn* the *nasal*. [In §. 338—349, the reader

will find these arranged under different heads, according to the sounds which they respectively govern.]

(a) It may be expedient here to caution the reader against an erroneous observation made by several grammarians, that 'the middle sound comes after *all* prepositions, except *yn*, in, and *faa*, towards.'

685. *Mewn*, and *yn*, in.

Mewn is placed before *indefinitive* words.

Mewn llyfr, in a book. *Mewn* ty, in a house.

Yn is placed before *definitive* words; i. e. the definite article, whether expressed or virtually implied in another word.

a) *The article expressed.*

Yn y llyfr, in the book. *Yn* y ty, in the house.

b) *Proper names.*

Yn Llundain. *Yn* Nafydd. *Ym* Mon.

c) *The personal, possessive, and demonstrative pronouns.*

Yn ef fi. *Yn* fy nhf. *Yn* hyny.

d) *A noun governing another in the possessive case.*

Ym mhen y ffordd. *Yn* nhf fy nhad.

(a) Here '*mhen*' and '*nhad*' are virtually definitive, according to §. 380.: hence they are preceded by *yn*, not *mewn*. If, however, the preceding noun is not definitive, *mewn* will be employed.

Mewn heddwch meddwl.

Mewn dinas wagedd.

e) The words *pob*, *pawb*, *prwy*, *pa*, *holl*, and some others.

Ym mhob man. *Ym* mhawb. *Ym* mhwy.

Ym mha ardal y bydd fy lletty.

(a) *Yn* is also placed before some indefinite words to form compound propositions.

Ym mron. *Yng* ngwydd. *Yng* nghyda.

Ym mhlith. *Yn* lle. *Yn* ymyl.

(b) In the words '*Ym* *mhell*' *yn* preposition is used for *yn* apposition; and, on the contrary, *yn* apposition is put for *yn* preposition in '*yn* *Gymraeg*.'

686. Some writers change '*yn* preposition' into *ym* before *m* and *mh*; and into *ying* before *ng* and *ngh*. Others deny the propriety of this change, and write *yn* under all circumstances.

Ym mhen yr heol; or *Yn* mhen yr heol.

Yna Nghaersalem; or *Yn* Nghaersalem.

(a) Many join the preposition to the following word; as *y'mren, y'ngŵydd*; but this creates an unnecessary exception to the rules of accentuation. [See §. 85. (b.)]

687. It may be convenient here to repeat the different functions of *yn* with illustrations to shew its force and government in each place.

a. '*Yn participial*' is placed before the Infin. mood to form a participle, and is followed by the *radical* sound.

Yn dysgu. Yn cerdded. Yn parhau.

β. '*Yn apposition*' is placed before a noun or adjective, to set it in apposition with a preceding word, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Y mae Arthur yn frenin. Y mae Arthur yn ddewr.

γ. '*Yn adverbial*' is placed before an adjective to convert it into an adverb, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Yagrifena yn gampus. Darllena yn wych.

δ. '*Yn preposition*' is placed before a substantive, adjective, or pronoun, and is followed by the *nasal* sound.

Yn nhy fy nhad. Ym mhob ty. Yng ngharchar.

688. *A* (or *ag*) and *gan*. *A* and *ag* correspond to *with*, denoting the instrument; *gan* corresponds to *by*, denoting the agent.

Tarawyd ef â chareg gan Arthur.

689. *At* and *i*. *At*=to, towards, denotes *proximity*; *i*=to within, into, to.

Dos at dy frawd. Dos i'th dy.

690. *Erbyn, yn erbyn, i.. erbyn*. *Erbyn*=against or by, refers to *time*; *yn erbyn*=against or contrary to, denotes *opposition*; *i.. erbyn* has the same meaning as *yn erbyn*, but is used only when the object is a *pronoun*.

Bydd yn barod erbyn dydd Iau.

Ymladdodd yn fy erbyn. Ymladdodd yn erbyn Arthur.

Ymladdodd i'm herbyn.

694. *Cer, ger, by; cerfydd, gerfydd, by; cwedi, gwedi*, after; *cyda, gyda, with; can, gan, by*. The strong form *cer, cerfydd, cwedi, &c.* occurs after *a*, (and, as,) and *na*,

696. When '*compound prepositions ending with a substantive*' (§. 349.) precede personal pronouns, a corresponding possessive will intervene between the component parts of the prepositions.

Ar ol: *ar fy ol i*; *ar dy ol di*; *ar ei ol ef*.

(a) Unless the phrase is emphatic, the pers. pron. may be left out; the possessive being thought sufficient to convey the meaning.

Ar fy ol; *ar dy ol*; *ar ei ol*.

697. The prep. *is law*, *ger llaw*, *uwch law*, and *oddi amgylch*, usually take *i* after them.

Is law: *is law i mi*; *is law i ti*; *is law iddo ef*.

(a) *Heb law* is an exception, as it neither takes *i* nor the possessive. (*Ni ddaeth yma neb heb law chwi.*) In some instances, however, we find the pronouns inserted. *Arglwyddi ereill heb dy law di*. *Is. xxvi. 13.*

698. When the object of the prep. is a *substantive*, such compounds as take *i* after them when followed by pronouns, may or may not retain it when followed by substantives; but those, which use the poss. when the object is a pron., will, of course, dismiss it before a substantive.

Is law i'r afon; or *Is law yr afon*.

Ar ol dyddiau lawer. *O flaen y brenin*.

699. **Pronominal prepositions** are a class of compound words, formed by suffixing a personal pron. to a preposition. [See §. 350—357.] They will be rendered into English by a prep. and a pron. in the objective case.

Dos ato, go to him. *Pwysa arno*, press upon it.

(a) When the object of the prep. is a noun, the pronominal inflexion will of course be dismissed.

Dos at y dyn, go to the man. *Pwysa ar y gareg*, press upon the stone.

700. When the pron. requires to be expressed with a degree of emphasis, it is repeated after the pronominal preposition.

Simple.

Ataf. Atom.
Atat. Atoch.
{ Ato. Atynt.
{ Ati.

Emphatic.

Ataf fi. Atom ni.
Atat ti. Atoch chwi.
{ Ato ef or fe. Atynt hwy.
{ Ati hi.

INTERJECTIONS.

701. When an interjection is placed before a noun, adjective, or pronoun, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

O *dad!* O *drugarog dad!* Och *fi!*

Wela *bedwar* bwystfil yn ymryson. *Dan.* vii. 7.

702. When the interjection is omitted, the noun or adj. under its government is most usually put in the *middle* sound; but sometimes retains its *radical* initial.

Mid. { Olygydd hynaws; garedig gyfaill.
Barchedig syr; *drugarog* Dad.

Rad. Duw *dad*, o'r nef, trugarha wrthym.

703. When an interjection intervenes between a verb and its subject or object, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

Nid yw efe yn gallu, *ow!* dalu dim.

704. When it stands before a *finite* verb, the verb retains its *radical* sound; as

O! *tyred* yma. Och! *paid* â'm lladd.

CLAUSES.

705. Clauses are divided into *main* (or *principal*) and *subjoined*.

706. 'The *main clause* is that which contains the leading proposition; and it must express a complete idea, even when separated from the rest of the sentence.'

He will not be pardoned, unless he repent.

He would not be pardoned, unless he repented.

Pardon him. *May he be pardoned.*

707. 'A *subjoined clause* is a simple sentence, or part of a sentence, modifying the main clause.'

Arthur says *that he has learnt his lesson.*

Arthur shall have a penny, *because he has learnt his lesson.*

Arthur shall have a penny, *if he will learn his lesson.*

TRANSITIVE CLAUSE.

708. The *Transitive Clause* comes after words significative of *affirmation*, *sense*, and *mental operations*; as *saying*, *seeing*, *hearing*, *feeling*, *knowing*, *thinking*, &c. In

English it is introduced by the conjunction *that*, and the late *Kerchever Arnold* defines it as, "A sentence that stands in apposition to a nominative or accusative, expressed or understood, in the principal sentence.

It is strange *that you think so*. Here the clause *that you think so* is in apposition to *it*; i. e. *this thing*.

I am glad *that you are come* = I am glad of *this*; namely, *that you are come*."

709. In Welsh this clause is expressed (*a*) in *positive* sentences, by the *Infinitive* mood, or by the conj. *y* (*yr*), *mai* or *taw*, with *finite* moods: (*b*) in *negative* sentences, by *finite* moods. The particles of negation in Transitive clauses are *na*, *nad*, and *nas*, except in connection with *mai* (or *taw*), which, if retained, is followed by *ni*, *nid*, or *nis*.

710. **The Infinitive mood.** This construction is used in simple narration, or when the emphasis, if any, falls on the verb of the Clause.

711. A. *The Infinitive mood followed by its subject.* This construction occurs when the verb is *bod*, either as main or auxiliary, and when it simply declares a thing; i. e. when it is equivalent to a verb in the Indicative mood. The tenses of the Indic. which will admit of this form in subordinate sentences are the following.

<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Infinitive.</i>
Pres. Yr wyf yn dysgu.	Dywed fy mod i yn dysgu.
Imperf. Yr oeddwn yn dysgu.	Dywedai fy mod i yn dysgu.
Perf. def. Yr wyf wedi dysgu.	Dywed fy mod i wedi dysgu.
Plup. Yr oeddwn wedi dysgu.	Dywedodd fy mod i wedi dysgu.

Additional examples. Ac os bwriwn at hyn eu bod hwy yn ddigon cydnabyddus â'r pethau. *Edw. Samuel.* Harddwch yr iaith yw bod ei geiriau yn dangaws eu defnydd cyssefin. *Dr. Pughe.* Ymddengys bod yr ysgrythyrau wedi myned yn dra phrinion. *W. Davies.* Wrth weled fod ei holl feddwel ar y byd a ddaw. *Nicander.*

(*a*) If the subject be a pronoun, it may be omitted; but it is always represented by a corresponding possessive immediately preceding the verb. (Gwyr fy mod yn dyfed.)

(b) With this construction of the Infinitive for Indicative compare the Greek and Latin idioms.

Τῷ οὐ νεμεσίσοι' Ἀχαιοὶς ἀσχαλᾶν παρὰ νηυσὶ κορωνίσιν. *Homer.*
Dicit me scribere. Ferunt unam exspirasse.

712. If the sentence is negative, it will be expressed by a corresponding tense of the *Indicative* mood.

Pos. Gwyr fod Arthur yn dyfod. Neg. Gwyr nad yw Arthur yn dyfod.

Pos. Gwyddai fod Arthur yn dyfod. Neg. Gwyddai nad oedd Arthur yn dyfod.

Additional examples. Mae'n gyfelybol nad oedd ganddyni y llyfrau hyn. *Edw. Samuel.* Ffroestio nad oes dim bai ynddi. *M. Kyffin.* Fel y gwybyddont nad ydynt hwy ond dynion. *Ed. Prys.* Lle y dangosais nad oes ond un gwir Dduw. *Edw. Samuel.*

713. B. *The Infinitive mood with its subject connected to it by the preposition 'o,'* if the subject be a *noun*; by an *inflexion of 'o honof,'* if it be a *pronoun*. This construction is used to express (a) the *past Indicative*, corresponding to (e. g.) *I learnt, I had learnt*; or (b) the *Subjunctive*, corresponding to (e. g.) *I should learn*.

714. In a *negative* sentence, the former will be expressed by the *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative*; the latter by the *Subjunctive*.

- (a) { Pos. Yn gwybod fynes o'r gwr; fynes o hono ef.
Neg. Yn gwybod nad aeth y gwr; nad aeth efe.
- (b) { Pos. Gorchymmyn gymmeryd o honof y llyfr.
Neg. Gorchymmyn na chymmerwyf y llyfr.
Pos. Gorchymmynodd gymmeryd o honof y llyfr.
Neg. Gorchymmynodd na chymmerwn y llyfr.

Additional examples. a. Gwn yn wir anfon o'r Arghwydd ei angel. *Acts xii. 11.* Yn gwybod dyngu o Dduw iddo. *Acts ii. 30.* Y mae yn dywedyd siarad o honaw. *Edw. Samuel.*

b. Hyn yw ewyllys yr hwn a'm hanfonodd i, cael o bob un ... fywyd tragwyddol. *John vi. 40.* Chwennyoch yr ydym ni gael o bob wybod ein hachos. *M. Kyffin.*

(a) The sentence has the force of the *subjunctive* after words that imply *commanding, entreating, wishing, praying, &c.* Here, however, the Infinitive is very often preceded by the preposition *ar* or *am*, to distinguish this from the other signification of the verb. Thus, 'dywedodd fynes o hono' = he said *that he went*; but 'dywedodd ar fynes o hono' = he said (or ordered) *that he should go*.

(b) The connectives *o* and *o honof* are sometimes omitted after a certain class of verbs; as

Hon yw y ddamnedigaeth, *ddyfod goleuni i'r byd*, (for *ddyfod o oleuni i'r byd*.)

Na thybiwch *fy nyfod* i dori y gyfraith, (for *ddyfod o honof*.)

715. Γ. *The Infinitive mood preceded by its subject under the government of a preposition.* The prepositions here employed are *i*, *ar*, and *am*. If the preposition be *i*, the verb may have the force of (a) the *past Indicative*; or (b) the *Subjunctive*, according to the import of the verb of the Main Clause, as above. In a negative sentence, the former will be expressed by *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative*; the latter by the *Subjunctive*, or by *peidio â* (to cease with) followed by the other Infinitive verb.

Pos. Dywed **i mi fyned**. Neg. Dywed **nad aethym**.

Pos. Gorchymmynodd **i mi fyned**. Neg. Gorchymmynodd **[i mi] nad awn**; or Gorchymmynodd **i mi beidio â myned**.

Additional examples. Y dynion a wyddent *iddo ffoi oddi ger bron yr Arghoydd*. *Jonah i. 10.* Barn rhai yw, *i Wrtheyrn wahodd y Saeson*. *Theo. Evans.* Pr cymmylau y gorchymmynaf *na wlawiont arni hi*. *Is. v. 6.* Efe a weddiodd *na byddai wlaw*. *James v. 17.* Y mae yn wir *i genedl y Cymry wrthsefyll y surdoes yn hwy na'u cymmydogion*. *W. Davies.* Traethodd *na welsai fo erioed ddyben daionus o un o'r cynghorau*. *M. Kyffin.*

(a) The *past Indicative* is often expressed by the auxiliary *darfod*, followed by the above construction. Dywed *ddarfod i mi fyned ymaith*. Cant welod *ddarfod iddynt hwy eu hunain ymadael â'r apostolion*. *M. Kyffin.*

716. When the subject is preceded by *ar*, with or without *i*; or by *am* with *i*, the verb has the force of the *Subjunctive*.

Deisyfodd *ar Arthur ddyfod*. Deisyfodd *ar i Arthur ddyfod*.

Dymunem *ar ein darllenwyr bwysaw yn iawndeg y rheol*. *Tegid.*

717. Δ. *Passive voice. The Infinitive followed by an object (= a subject with a finite verb) in positive sentences.* Negative sentences will be expressed (a) by the *perfect indefinite* and *pluperfect Indicative*; or (b), if contingent in signification, by the *Subjunctive*, or *peidio â*, followed by the other verb in the Infinitive.

Pos. *Infinitive*. Dywedodd **ddwyn yr arian ymaith**.

Neg. *Indicative*. Dywedodd **na ddygwyd yr arian ymaith**.

Pos. Infinitive. Gorchymmynodd ddwyn Arthur yno.

Neg. Subjunctive. Gorchymmynodd na ddygid Arthur yno; or
Gorchymmynodd beidio â dwyn Arthur yno.

(a) When the sentence has the force of the Subjunctive, the Infinitive is often preceded by the preposition *ar* or *am*.

Gorchymmynodd *ar* (or *am*) ddwyn Arthur yno.

Gorchymmynodd *ar* (or *am*) beidio â dwyn Arthur yno.

Additional examples. Gwelwch rei y defnydd yn lle y peth a achoswyd. *Henri Perri.* Gan brofi ddarfed ein cyfiawnkân. *W. Salebri.* Yn dywedyd wneuthur Iesu Grist yn weinidog i'r enwaed-iaid. *Rom. xv. 8.* Sylwanom drin yr achawc gan ereill yn fedrus a phriedawol. *Tegid.*

718. E. Another form of the passive voice is that made by the use of *cael* (*to have*) accompanied by the constructions mentioned under A, B, F.

Dywed { fod Arthur yn cael ei ddygu.
 { gael o Arthur ei ddygu.
 { i Arthur gael ei ddygu; (or *fod i Arthur gael ei ddygu*, after words that imply *commanding*, &c.)

Additional examples. Gorchymmynodd bod i'r epistolau gael eu darllen. *W. Davies.* Ddodfwyl yn y senedd fod i'r ddau destament gael eu cyfieithu. *W. Davies.*

719. Z. Y (or yr), *mai* and *taw* with *finite moods*.

720. Y (or yr), like the *Infinitive for Indicative*, is used in simple narration; and hence the order will be *conjunction, verb, subject*.

(a) Y is put before consonants and governs the *radical* sound; yr before vowels.

721. Y is placed before the tenses *byddwn*, *buaswn*, and *byddaf*, whether they be main or auxiliary verbs; before all tenses of the Indicative of *inflected verbs*¹, and before the imperfect and pluperfect of the Subjunctive.

In negative sentences the conjunction *y* or *yr* is omitted, the particle *na*, *nad*, or *nas*, preceding the verb.

Pos. Dywed y bydd efe yno. Neg. Dywed na fydd efe yno.

Pos. Dywed y gwyr y chwedl. Neg. Dywed na wyr y chwedl.

(a) The present tense, and especially the indefinite past, prefer the use of the Infinitive to this construction.

¹ That is, verbs conjugated without the aid of *bod*: e. g. *dygaf*, *dygwn*.

Additional examples. Yn dywedyd y distrywiai yr Iesu . . . y lle yma, ac y newidiai efe y defodau. *Acts vi. 14.* Caiff weled y bydd ganddynt oll hamdden i gymdeithasu ag ef. *Nicander.* Sylwer yma na chynnwysir moddau anorphenadwy y perwyddinid. *Tegid.* Gellid gweled trwy hwn nas meddai yr un galon. *Ellis Wynn.* Ffrostio y maent na ddichon eu heghwys syrthio. *M. Kyffin.*

722. Mai or taw. It has been seen that *y* is found when the finite verb takes the lead in a sentence; *mai* (or *taw*), on the other hand, comes in when some other part of speech (including the Infinitive verb) is emphatic, and goes before the verb. *Mai* is never found before finite verbs; and hence, as it has no influence over the verb, the verb may either be simple or compound, either in the Indicative or Subjunctive, and of any tense.

Dywedir. { *Mai* goleuni yw *Mai* trwy ffydd y mae Duw
Duw.
{ *Mai* ceisio anrhydded yr oedd. yn cyfiawnhau.
Mai yma y daeth eich brawd.

(a) *Mai* in North Wales; *taw* (and sometimes *tai*) in South Wales. Both govern the radical sound.

Additional examples. Hyn a ddywedaf, *mai* rhyfeddol yw eu digywilydd-dra. *Edw. Samuel.* Gosododd ar droed y chwedl, *mai* trwy draws a' nghyfiawnder y dalasai efe diroedd ei ddwy nith. *W. Davies.* Diammau *mai* dynion wedi ymroddi i feddalwch oeddent. *Theo. Evans.* Gwyddai *mai* hawdd cymmodi lle byddai cariad. *Theo. Evans.* Credir *mai* efe a ranodd Gymru yn Esgobaethau. *Brutus.*

723. In a negative sentence, the emphatic word is preceded by *na*, *nad*, *nas*; or *mai* (or *taw*) *ni*, *nid*, *nis*.

Dywed *nad* efe yw y gwr; or Dywed *mai* *nid* efe yw y gwr.

Additional examples. Yn meddwl *nad* gwaith yr awdwy'r hynny oeddynt. *Edw. Samuel.* Dywedant *nad* rhydd oedd i ni gychwyn yr helynt. *M. Kyffin.* Fe ellir tybied *mai* *nid* ar y ddelw ei hun y gweddient. *Theo. Evans.* Sylwer *mai* *nid* hawdd camsynied tonau (waves) a tonau (tunes). *Tegid.*

CAUSE CLAUSE.

724. Sentences introduced by conjunctions causal are divided into (a) *cause clause*=*ŵr*, *quod*, *because*: (b) *explanatory cause clause*=*γάρ*, *enim*, *for*.

725. The cause clause is headed, in Welsh, by the following words: O achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith, am,

(more rarely, *achos*, *herwydd*, *plegyd*, *o blaid*, *o ethryb*, *gwaith*)=*because*. *Gan*, *can*, *yn gymmaint* a (or *ag*)=*since, seeing, inasmuch as*.

726. The particles of *negation* in a *cause clause* are *na*, *nad*, and *nas*, except when *mai* or *taw* is retained. (*See below*.)

727. The preceding *causal conjunctions* are followed by the various forms exhibited under the *Transitive Clause*; i. e. a *Transitive* may be converted into a *Cause clause* merely by prefixing a *causal conjunction*.

728. A. *The Infinitive followed by its subject, in positive sentences. The Indicative followed by its subject, in negative sentences.*

Pos. O herwydd bod Arthur yn dyfod.

Neg. O herwydd nad yw Arthur yn dyfod.

Additional examples. Ni chwanegaf feldithio y ddair... o herwydd bod bryd calon dyn yn ddwrng o'i ieuentyd. *Gen.* viii. 21. Moses a gudiwyd, o achos eu bod yn ei weled yn fachgen thus. *Heb.* xi. 23. *Gan nad gstyrir pob gwenethurwr yn lle ei achosedig.* *Henri Perri.* Nid oes achos a nghaelio yr epistol o herwydd nad yw'r awdur yn adnabyddus. *E. Samuel.* *Gan fod y pwrn yn bwrsg.* *Tegid.* O herwydd bod arfau y Cymry yn fwy llwary. *W. Davies.*

729. B. *The Infinitive with its subject connected by 'o,' or an inflection of 'o honof,' in positive sentences. The perfect or plup. Indic. followed by its subject, in negative sentences.*

Pos. O herwydd caru o Arthur y rhian. Neg. O herwydd na charodd Arthur y rhian.

Pos. O herwydd caru o hono ef hi. Neg. O herwydd na charodd efe hi.

Additional examples. Am hyny gan bryd o honon wirionedd y grefydd Gristionogol. *E. Samuel.* Ni chad niwed, o herwydd erada o hono yn ei Ddew. *Dan.* vi. 23. *Am farau o hono ei caid yn gyflawn.* *Job xxxii. 2.* O herwydd caru o'r Arghwydd chwi. *Deut.* vii. 8. *Yn gymmaint a dydddef o hono.* *Heb.* ii. 18.

(a) The subject is sometimes omitted. Minnan a ddywedais gyfnewt y llais. *Ellis Wynn.* (*Sc. o honof.*)

730. F. *The Infinitive preceded by its subject under the government of the prep. 'i,' in positive sentences. The*

perfect or plup. Indic. followed by its subject, in negative sentences.

Pos. O herwydd i Arthur ei charu.

Neg. O herwydd na charodd Arthur hi.

Additional examples. O herwydd i ti eu hoffi hwynt. Ps. xliv. 3. Gan i Dduw ddwyn tystiolaeth. Heb. xi. 4. Am na chawsent hwy ateb. Job xxxii. 3. Yn gymmaint ag i mi eich gwahodd. Prov. i. 24.

(a) *Darfod* is often prefixed to the foregoing construction.

O herwydd *darfod* iddo ei gyfodi ef. Acts xvii. 31.

731. Δ. *Passive voice. The Infinitive followed by an object (= a subject with a finite verb), in positive sentences. The Indic. followed by its subject, in negative sentences.*

Pos. O herwydd dwyn yr arian. Neg. O herwydd na ddygwyd yr arian.

Bu grwnach. . . am ddirmygu eu gwagedd gweddwon hwy. Acts vi. 1.

732. E. *Cael* accompanied by the constructions mentioned under A, B, Γ.

O herwydd { bod Arthur yn cael ei ddygsu.
cael o Arthur ei ddysgu.
i Arthur gael ei ddysgu.

733. Government. *Am* and *gan* (or *can*) have the middle sound after them; as 'Am or gan ddyfod o hono.' *Yn gymmaint a* or *ag* has the same government as *a* and *ag*. (§§. 678, 679.) The others are followed by the *radical*, (but sometimes by the *middle* of the verb *bod*.)

O achos dywedyd o hono.

O herwydd bod (or fod) Arthur yno.

734. Z. *Y* (or *yr*), *mai*, and *taw* with *finite verbs*, in *positive* sentences. In *negative* sentences *y* and *yr* are omitted; *mai* and *taw* are sometimes omitted, sometimes retained. If retained, they are followed by the neg. particles, *ni*, *nid*, *nis*.

Pos. Am y gwn hyny. Neg. Am na wn hyny.

Pos. O herwydd mai efe yw y gwr. Neg. O herwydd nad (or mai nid) efe yw y gwr.

Gan na wyddom yn drylwyr pwy yw'r awdwr. W. Davies.

O herwydd mai yno y ciliodd y rhan fwyaf o wyr llen. Theo. Evan

735. The *explanatory clause* 'assigns a reason for an assertion made in the preceding clause.'

736. It is introduced by *canys*=for: also by *o achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith*.

737. The particles of *negation* are *ni, nid, nis*, (never *na, nad, nas*.)

738. The *Explanatory Clause*, whether positive or negative, has *always* its verb in a *finite* mood; i. e. in the Indicative or Subjunctive.

Pos. *Canys y mae yn rhyfelwr*. Neg. *Canys nid yw yn rhyfelwr*.

Additional examples. Clodforwch yr Arglwydd, *o herwydd ei drugaredd a bery yn dragyrydd*. Ps. cxviii. 1. A thi a elwi ei enw ef Iesu, *o blegyd efe a wared ei bobl*. Matt. i. 21. Ni allwn lai na chydabod fod ei bysgrythyrau yn wir, *o blegyd ni thardda cefwydd ond naill ai o anwybodaeth ai o feddwl drwg*. E. Samuel. Nid anhegorawl hyn, *canys gall pob darlennydd weled ystyr a meddwl y geiriau*. Tegid. Yr wyt yn un o honynt, *canys y mae dy leferydd yn dy gyhuddo*. Matt. xxvi. 73.

739. The *explanatory conjunctions*, unlike those of the preceding clause, do not require any particular position of the verb, &c. after them. Thus we have

Subject preceding: *canys efe a ddaeth i'r ty*.

Verb preceding: *canys daeth efe i'r ty*.

Object preceding: *canys hwn a darewaist*.

(a) *Canys, o achos, &c.* are followed by the *radical* sound.

THE CONCESSIVE CLAUSE.

740. The *Concessive Clause* expresses a concession or admission of a certain truth, and is usually followed by the adversative conjunction 'yet' in the subsequent clause. [*ei kai; quamquam, although.*]

741. It is introduced in Welsh by *er*, and *serch*. The particles of *negation* are *na, nad, nas*.

(a) *Er* and *serch* are followed by the *radical* sound.

742. The construction of this clause is the same as that of the *Transitive* and the *Cause*.

743. A. *Ex.* Pos. Er bod Arthur yno. Neg. Er nad yw Arthur yno.

Additional examples. Er bod rhai yn llawenhâu. *Ellis Wynn.* Er bod gwaedd ganddynt yn ei ddynstr. *Job xxx. 24.* Er ei fod yn ffyddlaw. *Hosea xiii. 15.* Er bod arno nodau oes ddiweddarach. *W. Davies.* Er nad oedd y tai ond isel yma. *Ellis Wynn.* Er bod llawer peth wedi llygru yn eu plith hwy. *M. Kyffin.* Er na bu erioed lawenach yn ei galon. *Theo. Evans.*

744. B. *Ex.* Pos. Er dywedyd o honynt. Neg. Er na ddywedasant hwy.

Er gwario o honynt y rhelyw o'r wythnos. *Nicander.*

745. C. *Ex.* Pos. Er i Arthur ddyfod. Neg. Er na ddaeth Arthur.

Er nad aeth hi erioed i mewn. *Ellis Wynn.*
Er iddo ddyoddef llawer o helbulon. *W. Davies.*

746. D. *Ex.* Pos. Er dirmygu eu gwragedd. Neg. Er na ddirmygwyd eu gwragedd.

Er anfon llythyr ato, er hyny ni chlywyd oddi wrtho.

Er estyn goleuni iddynt, hwy a gauant eu llygaid rhag gweled. *Brutus.*

747. E. *Ex.* Er bod Arthur yn cael ei ddysgu.
Er cael o Arthur ei ddysgu.
Er i Arthur gael ei ddysgu.

748. Z. *Ex.* [The conjunction *cyd* is also used in this construction.]

Pos. Er y gŵyr efe. Neg. Er na wŷr efe.
Er mai efe yw y dyn. Er nad efe yw y dyn.

Additional examples. Cyd y gallasai ereill yn well. *Henri Perri.* A chyd dylem ni addef. *Com. Prayer.* Cyd na byddo ond ammod dyn. *Gal. iii. 15.* A bawddyn er na byddai. *Gor. Owen.* Er na fedrant silliadu braidd un gair yn ei le. *Tegid.*

(a) Er is moreover followed by an adj. in the equal degree, (e. g. *gwyned*.)

Er lleied y bo, *though it be ever so small.*
Er teced wyt, *though thou art so fair.*

TIME CLAUSE.

749. The conjunctions (or conjunctive adverbs) of *time* are the following: *Pan*, *pryd*, [ὅτε; *quum*; *when*.] *Cyn*, [πρὶν; *antequam*; *before*.] *Wedi*, *gwedi*, (*cwedi*.) *ar ol*, *yn ol*, [ἐπει; *postquam*; *after*.] *Tra*, [ἐν ᾧ; *dum*; *whilst*.] *Cyhyd ag*, (*c'yd*, *c'yd ag*.) [ἕως; *donec*; *as long as*.] *Cyn gynted ag*, *gynted ag*, *mor fuan ag*, [ἐπει; *simul ac*; *as soon as*.] *Er pan*, [ἐξ οὗ; *ex quo*; *since*.] *Hyd*, *nes*, *tan*, *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *hyd nes*, *hyd oni*, &c. [ἄχρι; *donec*; *till*, *until*.] *Pa bryd bynag*, *pryd bynag*, [ὅταν; *quandocumque*; *whenever*.]

750. Some are construed with a *finite* mood; others with a *finite* or the *infinitive*, optionally.

751. a.) The following are construed with *finite* verbs; *pan*, *er pan*, *tra*, *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *hyd*, *tan*, *hyd oni*, &c.; *pa bryd bynag*, *pryd bynag*; and such as end with *ag*; as, *cyhyd ag*, &c. The particles of *negation* after these words are *na*, *nad*, *nas*.

(a) Here the verb will precede its subject. [Order: *conjunction*, *verb*, *subject*.]

Pan y daeth efe yma. Pryd nad oedd plentyn iddo.

Additional examples. *Tra yr oedd efe yn ymddyddan.* Luke xxiv. 32. *Hyd oni ddaeth efe.* Acts viii. 40. *Pan gymmerth y Cristianogion.* Theo. Evans. *A bydd pan godwyf gummwl.* Gen. ix. 14. *Marchnatewch hyd oni ddelwyf.* Luke xix. 13. *Hyd onid elo.* Is. xxvi. 20. *A chynted ag y gamoyd ef.* Ch. Edwards. *Gorfu arnom fyned oni ddaethom i'r lle.* Ellis Wynn. *Penderfynais chwilio tan gawn afael arno.* *Can gynted ag y cynnygid un euraidd i'm llaw.* W. Davies.

(a) *Oni*, *onid*, and *onis* (until), are not frequently met with. *Tan* is colloquial. *Pan*, *pryd*, *er pan* and *tra* are sometimes followed by *ag*. *Pan ag yr ydoedd yn sefyll ar ben uchaf y grisiau.* Brutus.

752. β.) The following are construed with *finite* or *infinitive* verbs; *cyn*, *wedi*, *gwedi*, (*cwedi*.) *ar ol*, *yn ol*, *nes*, *hyd nes*.

753. a. With *finite* verbs.

Mynaf ei weled cyn yr af ymaith.

Additional examples. *Wedi y cadarnhaer, nid yw neb yn ei ddirymu.* Gal. iii. 15. *Wedi y delo arnoch.* *Wedi 'r el y daw'r eilwaith.* *Nes y deffroer ef.*

(a) *Wedi, ar ol, and yn ol* are but rarely found with a finite verb of past time.

754. *b. With Infinitive verbs.* The construction of the sentence is the same as that of the *Transitive* and the *Cause*.

755. The time marked by the infinitive depends on the verb of the preceding clause; if it be in past time, the infinitive also will refer to past time; if in present or future, the infinitive will express future time or contingency.

Cymmerodd ofal o hono, nes i mi ddyfod, he took care of him till I came.

Cymmer ofal o hono, nes i mi ddyfod, take care of him until I come.

Additional examples. Wedi myned o honynt . . . hwy a ddaethant. Acts xii. 10. Pa le caid awen, cyn cael o'r mor ei ddorau? Gor. Owen. Cyn gwneuthur o honot y mynyddoedd. Wedi iddo gymmeryd pwyll. Acts xii. 12. Pan oedd ym Mesopotamia, cyn iddo drigo yng Ngharran. Acts vii. 2. Nes i'r Rhufeiniaid gwbl ddinystrio Ierusalem. Ch. Edwards. Ar ol iddo ef bregethu yn fuddiol. Ch Edwards. Wedi ei myned hi yn ddydd. Acts xii. 18. Ar ol myned y wybodaeth o'r gwir Dduw ar goll. Theo. Evans.

(a) Cf. Gr. *ἔως τοῦ ἐλθεῖν αὐτὸν* = *nes ei ddyfod ef*.

756. The verb is put in the future *Indicative*, or in the *Subjunctive*, according as the action or state is contemplated as *certain* or *contingent*. The future *Indicative* is, however, frequently met with, even when *contingency* is intended to be expressed.

757. *Y* and *yr*. The following conjunctions, when construed with *finite* verbs, are followed by the affirmative particle *y* or *yr*; *Cyn, pryd, wedi, ar ol, yn ol, hyd, nes, hyd nes, tra^u, pryd bynag, pa bryd bynag*, and such as end in *ag*; as *cyhyd ag, &c.*

Pryd y daeth dy fab. Tra y dychwelir draw'n eu hol. Ed. Prys.

758. *Pan, er pan* and *tan* may or may not be followed by the particle: if they are not, they govern the verb in the *middle* sound.

Pan y daeth; or Pan ddaeth.

759. *Oni, onid, onis, hyd oni, &c.* are never followed by *y* or *yr*. They have the same government as *ni, nid, nis*.

* *Tra* is sometimes found without the particle, and is then followed by the *radical* sound of the verb.

Tra llono ffrwd sychedig dir,

Tra cryno dail yr aethnen werdd. D. S. Evans.

MOTIVE CLAUSE.

760. The *Motive Clause* expresses a *purpose*, or “*a direction of the agent's will toward an end.*” [*ἵνα, ὅπως; ut; in order that.*]

In Welsh it is headed

761. a.) In positive sentences, by *mal, fal, fel, megys, modd*, followed by *y* or *yr*, with the *Subjunctive* mood. In *negative* sentences, by the *same conjunctions*, followed by *na, nad, nas*, with the *same mood*.

Pos. Daeth fel y gwelai efe hi. Neg. daeth fel na welai efe hi.

Additional examples. Fel y moliannwyf dy enw. Ps. cxliii. 7. Fel na welai farwolaeth. Heb. xi. 6. Fel y mynegwyf dy holl wyrth. Ed. Prys. Modd y delom o'r diwedd. Com. Prayer. Fel nad eppilient. Acts vii. 19.

762. β.) By *i=to; er=for; er mwyn=for the sake of;* with the *Infin.*, in *positive* sentences. In *negative* sentences, we borrow the preceding form, *mal na*, &c. with *Subj.*; or insert *peidio â* between the motive headings and the *Infinitive*.

Pos. Aethym yno er gweled fy nghyfaill.

Neg. Aethym yno fel na welwn, or er peidio â gweled fy nghyfaill.

Additional examples. Anfonwyd ef i Rydychain i yfed yn helaethack o ffrydiau dysg. W. Davies. Er coffhau ei ryglyddus grog. Com. Prayer. Er rhoddi terfyn ar bob amryson. Tegid. Ac yno syrthio i lawr i addoli 'r Baban Breninol. Nicander. Disgwyl a wnaethant am amser i ruthro ar eu meistriaid. Thev. Evans. Er mwyn cael mawr-lles gollyngdod. Com. Prayer. Er mwyn dynodi lle yr acen. Tegid. Sefydlu gŵyl i goffhau dyoddefaint Arglwydd y bywyd. Brutus.

(a) Cf. the Greek and English idioms.

κατέλιπεν αὐτοὺς φυλάττειν τὸ στρατόπεδον.

He left them to guard the camp.

(b) *I* governs the *middle*; *er* and *er mwyn*, the *radical*.

(c) *I'r dyben o*, and *i'r bwriad o*, followed by the *Infin.* are now frequently used. [These are probably but a mere translation of the English phrase ‘for the purpose of.’]

Daeth yma i'r dyben o weled Arthur.

763. γ.) By *rhag*, which denotes ‘a negative purpose, a purpose of prevention,’ = *μή, ne, lest*. It is followed by the

Infinitive, or Subjunctive; sometimes by the future Indicative.

Aeth Arthur ymaith { Rhag gweled ei gyfaill.
Rhag gweled o hono ei gyfaill.
Rhag iddo weled ei gyfaill.
Rhag y gwelai ei gyfaill.

Additional examples. Felly Gwrtheym, rhag y difreinnid ef, a alwodd am gymmborth y Saeson. *Theo. Evans.* Iawn yw ysgrifennu pob gair yn null ei ddefnydd, rhag cuddiau ei ddechreuad. *Dr. Pughe.*

(a) *Rhag* is followed by the radical sound. Rhag bod; rhag dyfod.

THE EFFECT CLAUSE.

764. The *Effect Clause* expresses a *result* or *consequence*, and in English 'refers to a *so* or *such* in the principal sentence.' [*ὅτε*; *ut*; *that*.]

'The noise was *such*, *that* I could not hear a word.'

(a) *Such* will be expressed in Welsh by *y fath* or *cyfryw*; *so* by *mor* and *cyn*, or simply by putting the adjective in the *equal* degree, (e. g. *teced*, *cymmaint*.)

The *Effect Clause* is headed

765. a.) In *positive* sentences, by *mal*, *fal*, *fel*, followed by *y* or *yr*, with the *Indicative*,—unless the verb is *contingent* in signification, when, of course, it is put in the *Subjunctive*. In *negative* sentences, it is headed by the *same* conjunctions with *na*, *nad*, *nas*, or *ag na*, *ag nad*, &c. and joined to the *same* moods; or simply by *na*, *nad*, *nas*, without the conjunctions.

Cymmaint oedd ei lid fel y lladdodd ei frawd.

Yr ydych mor anwybodus ynddi, mal nas gellwch ei chlodfori.
H. Perri.

Additional examples. Y mae mor greulawn fel y lladdai ei frawd, pe gallai. *Y fath* hurtrwydd a'u perchenogent, fel y danfonasant genadon atynt. *Theo. Evans.* Mor erchyll ac ofnadwy, nad allai neb eu haros. *Edw. Samuel.* Cynnhyrwyd ei feddwl gymmaint, fel yr addunodd yn sobr. *Nicander.* Gan fod hyn mor eglur na ellir dim gwâd o honaw. *M. Kyffin.* Mewn trefn mor odidog nad oes bosibl i un maen fod cyn hardded. *E. Wynn.*

(a) It is not necessary that the words corresponding to *so* and *such* should always be expressed.

Ceryddodd y môr fel y sychodd. *Ps. cvi. 9.*

O herwydd ffyddlawn oedd efe, fel na chaed ynddo nac amryfuedd na bai. *Dan. vi. 4.*

766. *β.*) The temporals *oni*, *hyd oni*, *nes*, *hyd nes*=until, have often the force of *that*. *Oni* and *hyd oni* are joined to a *finite* mood; *nes*, and *hyd nes*, to a *finite* or the *infinitive* mood. •

Mor dosturus oedd yr olwg, *oni orfu i'r cigyddion anfon am win* i gynnal eu calondid. *Ch. Edwards.*

INTERROGATIVE CLAUSE.

767. ' Questions are divided into *predicative* and *nominal*, according as the question refers to a predicate or to an object (person or thing).

768. *Predicative* questions are those where their proposer desires only an affirmation or denial to his enquiry. These are expressed in English merely by placing the finite verb first, and by the accentuation* ; in Greek and Latin, generally, and in Welsh always, by interrogative particles.

769. Interrogative particles ; *a*, *ai*, *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *ai ni*, *ai nid*, *ai nis*.

770. *A* is the most simple and unemphatic of the interrogative particles, and is placed before *finite* verbs. The answer to the question made by it may be *affirmative* or *negative*. [*ŷ* ; *ne*.]

A ddaeth eich brawd ? A atebir y llythyr ?

771. *Oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *ai ni*, *ai nid*, *ai nis*, are, like *a*, placed before *finite* verbs, and generally expect an *affirmative* answer. [*ἴσα οὖν* ; *nonne*.]

Oni ddarllenastoch chwi ? Onid aeth efe yno ?

772. *Government*. *A* governs the *middle* sound ; *oni* and *ai ni* are placed before *consonants*, and govern the *aspirate* sound of the *first* class, the *middle* of the *second* and *third* ; *onis* and *ai nis* are placed before *consonants*, and govern the *radical* ; *onid* and *ai nid* before *vowels*.

773. *AI* (=is it) is more emphatic than *a*, and may stand before any word, except a *finite verb*. The answer may be *affirm.* or *negative*.

* *Kühner and Arnold's Greek Grammars.*

774. *Ai* may stand before

- | | |
|---|--|
| a. A noun: <i>Ai llyfr yw?</i> | e. A partic.: <i>Ai wedi ei guro y cerir eff?</i> |
| b. An adj.: <i>Ai afiach yw?</i> | f. An adv.: <i>Ai yma y mae?</i> |
| c. A pronoun: <i>Ai efe yw y gwr?</i> | g. A conj.: <i>Ai fel y'th gyn-northwywn y daethost?</i> |
| d. An Infin. verb: <i>Ai darllen y mae?</i> | h. A prep.: <i>Ai yn y ty y mae?</i> |

775. *Onid* and *ai nid* are employed like *ai*, and generally expect an affirmative answer. [*âpa oðv*; *nonne*.]

Onid dirgelwch mawr yw hyn?

776. Government. *Ai*, *onid*, and *ai nid* are placed before vowels and consonants, and govern the radical sound.

777. The answers to predicative questions are made (a) by a repetition of the verb, preceded, in negative answers, by *na* or *nac*: (b) by *do*, in positive, and *naddo* in negative answers; (c) by *ie* in positive and *nage* in negative answers.

778. Answers to questions made by *a*, *onid*, *oni*, &c. followed by finite verbs.

779. If the question is asked in *any tense*, except the perfect indefinite, the answer is made by the proper tense and person of the same verb; and, if the answer be *negative*, *na* or *nac* will precede the verb.

A oes mawredd yn Nuw?

Affirm. answer, *Oes*.

A ddaw eich brawd yma?

Neg. answer, *Na ddaw*.

Additional examples. A all dyn waredu ei hun? *Na all.*
T. Charles. A ddylem ninnau wneuthur yr un fath? *Dylem.*
T. Charles.

(a) If the verb be *periphrastic*, (i. e. an inflexion of *bod* with a participle of the other verb,) the participle is omitted in the answer, unless emphasis is required, in which case the sentence may be repeated.

A ydyw Arthur yn dysgu? Simple: *ydyw*. Emphatic: *ydyw, y mae*; or *ydyw, y mae Arthur yn dysgu*.

(b) Very often the answer is made by an inflexion of *gwneuthur*, (to do,) and, if emphatic, with a repetition of the verb.

A ddysgi di hyn? Simple: *gwnaf*. Emphatic: *gwnaf, mi a'i dysgaf*.

780. If the question is asked in the *perfect indefinite*, the

answer is made by *do*, in *positive*; by *naddo*, in *negative* clauses: sometimes by a repetition of the verb.

A ddysgaist ti dy wers? Ans. *do*, or *dysgais*; *naddo*, or *na ddysgais*.

A fu pawb feirw yn Adda? Do. *Tho. Charles*.

A barhaodd dyn yn y cyflwr hwn? Na *ddo*. *Tho. Charles*.

(a) When emphasis is required, the verb is repeated after *do* or *naddo*.

A ddysgaist ti dy wers? Ans. *do*, *mi a'i dysgais*: *naddo*, *ni ddysgais mo honi*.

781. Questions made by *ai*, *onid*, and *ai nid*, followed by *nouns*, *adjectives*, &c. are answered, *affirmatively* by *ie*, *negatively* by *nage*.

Ai Arthur a ddygodd y llyfr? Affirm. ans. *ie*. Neg. *nage*.

(a) When emphasis is required, *ie* is followed by a part or the whole of the question (the interr. particle being, of course, omitted); *nage* is followed by *nid*, with a part or the whole of the question.

Ai Arthur a ddygodd y llyfr? Affirm. *Ie*, *Arthur*: *ie*, *Arthur a'i dygodd*. Neg. *Nage*, *nid Arthur*; *nage*, *nid Arthur a'i dygodd*.

782. 'Nominal questions are those in which the enquirer wishes to know the *name of a person, place, the time, &c.*; and are introduced by substantive or adjective interrogative pronouns, or by interrogative adverbs.'

783. *Pwy*, *who, whose, whom; which; what*, is sing. and pl., and of all genders: *pa*, *what*, is sing. and pl., and of all genders.

(*Pwy*.) *Pwy* a wnaeth y byd? *Pwy* yw y rhai hyn?

Pwy wyt ti, fy merch? Ych *pw*y a gymmerais?

(*Pa*.) *Pa* ddyn yw efe? *Pa* beth yw dyn?

Pa lyfrau a gymmerodd?

(a) The difference between *pw*y and *pa*, as given by our grammarians, is this: *pw*y being itself a substantive pronoun, is never joined to a substantive; *pa*, being an adjective, is never without one. *Dr. Davies* says: "Differentia utriusque est quod *pa* semper substantivum habet adjunctum; *pw*y nunquam." But *pw*y certainly has a substantive joined to it, sometimes in good authors, and continually in colloquial language. And *pa* stands alone in ancient authors; and sometimes in modern works.

Gwraig i *bwy* un o honynt. *Luke* xx. 33.

Y mawr drugarog Dduw, *pa* wna? *Llywarch Hen*.

Ni ddawr newynog *pa* ys. *Adage*.

Pa yw tadogaeth y gair? *Tegid*.

' *Arnold's Greek Gram.*

784. *Pa* is sometimes omitted, the following word acquiring an interrogative character. Thus we may say,

Pa beth or *beth*=what? *Pa sawl* or *sawl*=how many? *Pa faint* or *faint*=how much, how many?

Pa sawl rhan sydd mewn dyn? *Beth* a gollodd dyn?

785. The Interrogative adverbs, *lle*, *sut*, *pryd*, &c. which are really substantives, have acquired an adverbial character by the omission of a prep. and the interrogative *pa*. It is often optional whether a question is asked with the separate words, or with an ellipsis of the prep., or of the prep. and *pa*. Thus we may say,

Ym mha le, *pa le*, or *lle*, where? *Ym mha sut*, *pa sut*, or *sut*, how?

I ba le, *pa le*, or *lle*, whither? *Ar ba bryd*, *pa bryd*, or *pryd*, when?

Ym mha fodd, *pa fodd*, (contr. *p'odd*), or *modd*, how? *Am ba ham*, or *pa ham* (contr. *p'am*), why?

(a) These Interrogatives, whether expressed fully or elliptically, are followed by the auxiliary affirmative adverb *y* or *yr*.

Lle yr aeth efe? *Pa ham y daeth efe?*

786. Double questions, corresponding to *πότερον...ἢ; utrum...an: whether...or*.

Whether=*a*, *ai*, alone or preceded by *pa un*, *pa'r un*, or *pa un (pa'r un) bynag*.

Or=*ai*, *ynte*, *neu*. [*Or no:* no is expressed by *ni* or *peidio*.]

Nis gwn a ddaw Arthur ai peidio.

Nis gwn pa un ai Arthur ai Dafydd a ddaw.

Myfi a af pa'r un bynag a ddeuwch chwi neu beidio.

WISH CLAUSE.

787. A *Wish Clause* is generally expressed in Welsh by *o na*, *o nad*, or *o nas*, with the imperfect or pluperfect Subjunctive. [*εἴθε, εἰ γάρ; utinam; would that! oh that!*]

Imperfect. *O na wyddwn pa le y cawn ef.*

O na bai fy mhen i yn ddyfroedd.

O na byddai fyw Ismael ger dy fron di.

Pluperfect. *O na buasit ti yma.*

(a) "The literal signification of *O na* is *Oh! that not*; and in order to elicit the full signification from this, some ellipsis must be supplied

as passed over by the speaker under the intensity of passion. It expresses rather regret that a thing is not, than a desire that a thing should be; thus, *O na ddeuai y boreu*—Oh [how grievous] that the morning cometh not*."

SUPPOSITION AND INFERENCE.

788. *Supposition or conditional clauses* are divided into (a) **Fact supposition**, which expresses "possibility or simple supposition without any expression of uncertainty*." (b) **Contingent supposition**, which expresses "uncertainty with a prospect of decision*." (c) **Non-fact supposition**, which expresses "impossibility or belief that the thing is not so*."

789. The *Inference clause* (called also the *apodosis* or *consequence*) is that which accompanies a supposition. It may be a *main clause*, a *transitive*, an *interrogative*, &c.

790. a. The **Fact supposition** is introduced by *o* (=ei), *od*, or *os*, in *positive* sentences: by *os na*, *nad*, or *nas*, in *negative* sentences, if the adverb immediately follows *os*; by *os...ni*, *nid*, or *nis*, if the adverb is separated from *os* by the intervention of the nominative, &c. [ei; si; if.]

791. The *Fact supposition* has its verb in the *Indicative*; the *Inference*, in the *Indicative* or *Imperative*.

Os ydys yn ein holi ni... bydded hysbys i chwi. Acts iv. 9.

O chefais ffafr yn dy olwg di... rhodder i mi. Esther vii. 3.

(a) The *Non-fact supposition* is sometimes assumed or granted as truth, and then takes the form of the *Fact*. Here the *context*, not the *form*, must determine the clause.

Os drwg y dywedais, tystiolaetha o'r drwg. [So in Gr. ei κακὸς ἐλάλησα. John xviii. 23.]

So also in Latin. "*Si pugnāt extricata densis*

Cervā plagis, erit ille fortis." Horace.

Additional examples. Canys *os* Abraham a *gyfiawnharoyd* trwy weithredoedd, y mae iddo orfoledd. Rom. iv. 2. [Gr. ei ἐδικαλωθή.] *O thelais* ddrwg... erlidied y gelyn. Ps. xvii. 2. [Gr. ei ἀντετίθεκα.]

792. The **Contingent supposition** is introduced by *o*, *od*, or *os*, in *positive* sentences; by *os na*, *nad*, *nas*; or *os...ni*, &c. in *negative* sentences, like the *Fact supposition*.

* Hughes on Syntax.

* Arnold's Latin Prose composition.

[*èav, àv, ðv; si; if.*] *Negative sentences are also introduced by oni, onid, onis, oddi eithr, and oddi gerth. [*èav mð; nisi; unless.*]*

(a) *Oddi eithr* and *oddi gerth* are construed with the infinitive. (See below.)

793. The *Contingent* supposition has its verb generally (but see below) in the *Indicative* mood; the *Inference*, in the *Indicative, Imperative, or Infinitive*.

Os byddwch cwyllysgar . . . daioni y tir a fwytwch. *Is. i. 19.*

Onid af fi, ni ddaw y Dyddanydd atoch. *John xvi. 17.*

Os na bydd yno. Os efe ni bydd yno.

Additional examples. Os bydd wedi gwneuthur pechodau, hwy a faddeuir iddo. James v. 15. Pawb a'i cenfydd, o bydd bai. Gor. Owen. Felly ni ellwch chwithau, onid arosuoch ynof fi. John xv. 4. Rhag i'm gwrthwynebwyr lawenychu, os gogwyddaf. Ps. xv. 4. Rhag, os na wnawn, na bo genym na nerth na chyfleustra i wneuthur hyny. Ed. Samuel. Os gwneir hyn, nid ydym heb ddyfal a dwys obeithiaw y llwyddwn. Tegid. Yr oedd y cyfieithiad yn ddiweddar iawn, os nad yw etto mewn bod. W. Davies. Beth ynte, os y pab ni wyr oddi wrth hyn? M. Kyffin.

794. *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth*, like the *causal conjunctions*, are followed by the *Infin. mood*,

Oddi eithr { *ei fod yn dyfod.*
dyfod o hono.
iddo ddyfod.

795. If the *Inference clause* be a *Transitive*, depending on a verb of the past time, the *Contingent* has its verb in the *imperfect Subjunctive*.

Dywedodd y cawn fod yno, os cadwn ei orchymynion.

(*Explan.* 'Dywedodd,' a verb of the past time; 'y cawn fod yno,' a *Transitive clause*, and here the *Inference* of 'os cadwn ei orchymynion,' which is a *Contingent supposition*, having its verb in the *imperf. Subjunctive*.)

(a) The same construction is found after sentences which are resolvable into a *Main* and a *Transitive*. (E. g. *He promised him money—he said that he would give him money.*) *Addawodd (=dywedodd y rhoddai) arian iddo, os cwyllysiat.*

Additional examples. Rhisant gynghor i ymadaw . . . os gallent gyrhaeddyd hyd Phenice. Acts xxvii. 12. Cynnygiais oddef pob peth, os dileai fy enw o'r llyfr. Cynnygiwyd ei bywyd i Margaret Pierrone, os taflai ei Bibl i'r tân. Ch. Edwards.

796. *γ*. The *Non-Fact* supposition is introduced by *pe*, *ped*, or *pes*, in *positive* sentences: by *pe na*, *nad*, or *nas*; or *pe . . . ni*, &c.; and by *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *oldi eithr*, and *oddi gerth*, in *negative* sentences. [*ei*; *si*; *if*.]

(a) *Oddi eithr* and *oddi gerth* are construed with the Infinitive, as above.

797. The *Non-fact* has its verb in the *imperfect* or *pluperfect Subjunctive*; the *Inference*, in the *same mood*, except in one case where the *Indicative* is used.

(a) The *Non-fact* may have its verb in the *imperfect*, and the *Inference* in the *pluperfect*; or *vice versa*.

Pe plant Abraham fydddech, gweithredoedd Abraham a wnaech.

Additional examples. *Pe medrai dynion ganfod erchylltodd pechod, hwy a'i cashaent.* *Ed. Samuel.* *Pe rhyngum fodd dynion eto, ni byddwn was i Grist.* *Gal. i. 10.* *Ped adnabuasech fi, fy nhad hefyd a adnabuasech.* *John xiv. 17.* *Pe buasit ti yma, ni buasai farw fy mrawd.* *John xix. 21.* *Pe galwaswn, a phed atebasai efe i mi, ni chredwn.* *Job ix. 16.* *Diffygiaswn, pe na chredaswn.* *Ps. xxvii. 13.* *Llawenhaem yn fawr, pe gwelem ein cydwladwyr yn fwy hyddysg yn y lythraeth Gymraeg.* *Tegid.*

798. Sometimes the *Non-fact* is equivalent to a *Concessive clause*, and then the verb of the *Inference* will be in the *Indicative*.

Pe gwersyllai llu i'm herbryn (=er i lu wersyllu i'm herbryn) nid ofna fy nghalon.

Additional examples. *Pe cyfodai oad i'm herbryn, yn hyn mi a fyddaf hyderus.* *Ps. xxvii. 3.* *Pe collwn y cwbl, pa gollod yw?* *Ellis Wynn.* *Pe rhodiwn 'ar hyd glyn cysgod angeu, nid ofnaf niwed.* *Ps. xxiii. 4.* *Pe llefarwn a thafodau dynion ac angelion . . . yr wyf fel efydd yn seinio.* *1 Cor. xiii. 1.*

799. *Government.* *O*, *pe*, and *pes* are placed before *consonants*; *od* and *ped* before *vowels*; *os* before *vowels* and *consonants*.

800. *O* governs the 1st class in the *aspirate*; the 2d and 3d in the *radical*. *Pe*, (sometimes followed by *y* or *yr*) *os* and *pes* govern the *radical* of all classes. *Oni*, *onid*, and *onis* have the same peculiarities as *ni*, *nid*, and *nis*, from which they are derived. (§§. 639, 640.) *Oddi eithr* and *Oddi gerth* govern the *radical* sound.

RELATIVE CLAUSE.

For a list of the relative pronouns, see §§. 178, 179.

801. *Relative pronouns* are divided into *simple*, and *indefinite* (or *distributed*).

802. The *simple* refers to a well-known object, and has its verb in the *Indicative*; the *indefinite* refers to an antecedent in a vague manner, and, if the tense be future or contingent, it has its verb, properly, in the *Subjunctive* mood.

803. The proper *indefinite* relatives are *pwyl bynag*, *pa . . . bynag*, *yr un*, *y neb*, *y sawl*; but the *simple* relatives, except *pa un*, *pa rai*, are often employed as such. *Pa un*, pl. *pa rai*, are always *simple* relatives.

Pwyl bynag a syrthio ar y maen hwnw. Luke xx. 18.
Y neb a hauo anwiredd a fed flinder.

804. *Agreement.* The form *yr hon* &c. agrees with its antecedent in gender, number, and person; *y neb*, *yr un*, pl. *y sawl*, in number, and person: *pwyl bynag*, *ag*, and *a'r*, are indeclinable. *Pa . . . bynag* may be of any gender, number, and person, according to the word that is placed between *pa* and *bynag*.

Gender. *Duw, yr hon a'n gwnaeth.*

Number. *Y dynion, y rhai a welsom.*

Person. *Myfi, yr hon wyf yn ymddyddan â thi.*

(a) The agreement in person is, however, subject to the peculiarities mentioned under the syntax of the verb.

(b) Occasionally *a'r* is added after another relative; as *Beth bynag a'r a ofynant.* Matt. xviii. 19.

805. *Yr hyn* (which, that which) is neuter, and usually refers to the word *peth* (a thing) expressed or understood, or to a whole or a part of a sentence, as its antecedent.

Roddi o houoch eich cyrph . . . yr hyn yw eich rhesymol wasanaeth. Rom. xii. 1.

I gadw yr hyn a gollasid. Luke xix. 10.

Awn rhagom i ystyried geiriau unsill, yr hyn sydd o bwys nid bychan. Tegid.

806. If the antecedent is a noun of multitude, the relative is sometimes singular, sometimes plural.

Y gynulleidfa, yr hon oedd yn ei wrandaw.

A holl gaethglud Iudah, y rhai a aethant. Jer. xxviii. 4.

807. When the relative has two antecedents of different persons, the verb of the relative clause may refer to either of the two.

Myfi yw y gwr a welodd flinder. (Here the verb refers to *gwr*.)

Myfi yw yr Arglwydd, yr hwn a'ch neillduais chwi. (Here the verb refers to *myfi*.)

808. Position. The relative should be placed, as in English, as near as possible to its antecedent, and before the verb of its own clause.

A rhai o'r Saduceaid, y rhai sydd yn gwadu nad oes adgyfodiad.
Luke xx. 27.

Hwn yw y Crist, yr hwn yr wyf yn ei bregethu.

(a) To prevent ambiguity, or where emphasis is necessary, the antecedent is repeated after *yr hwn*, *yr hon*, *yr hyn*; as
Iachawdwriaeth, am yr hon iachawdwriaeth.

Yr hwn air a arwyddocâ ynys.

Yr hwn, *yr hon*, and *yr hyn* govern the repeated antecedent in the middle sound: *yr hwn ddyn*.

809. When the relative is under government of a prep., the preposition is sometimes placed before the relative, sometimes after the verb of the clause in the form of a pronominal preposition. The latter is by far the more elegant and idiomatic construction.

Y cyfaill at yr hwn yr anfonais lythyr.

Y cyfaill, yr hwn yr anfonais lythyr ato.

810. Omission of antecedent. The antecedent of the relative is sometimes omitted, especially if the relative be used indefinitely. [Cf. *whoever*, *whosoever*.]

Pwy bynag a ddelo a wobrwyr.

Y neb a chwanego wybodaeth a chwanega ofid.

811. When the omitted antecedent is governed by a prep., the prep. is put before the relative pronoun; as

Gofynwch i'r hwn sydd yn gwybod.

812. Omission of relative. The relative pronoun is very often omitted. In this case the affirm. auxiliary *a* is carefully retained.

Arthur yw y gwr a ymladdodd mor wrol.

Y rheol a roddwn mewn perthynas iddynt yw hon. *Tegid.*

Ym mhob ordinhâd a wnelo y gymmanfa. *M. Kyffin.*

813. When the omitted relative is governed by a prep., the prep. stands after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition; as

Y wlad y daethost allan o honi. Y dydd y'm ganed ynddo.
Yn y cyfyngder trallodus y'n dygwyd iddo. *Theo. Evans.*

(a) When point of time is expressed by the relative clause, the relative and preposition are sometimes left out.

Hyd y dydd y cymmerwyd ef i fynu. *Acts i. 22.* [Unders. *yn yr hwn.*]

Yn y dydd y gwnaeth yr Arglwydd. *Gen. ii. 4.* [Unders. *yn yr hwn.*]

814. When both the antecedent and relative are under government of prep. and the antecedent is omitted, the prep. that governs the antecedent is put before the relative, and that which governs the relative comes after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition.

Rhoddwch i'r hwn y cymmerasoch oddi arno.

815. Sometimes a prep. is put before the relative, and repeated after the verb. [Some consider this repetition inelegant, if not erroneous.]

I'r rhai a eisteddant . . . y cyfododd goleuni iddynt. *Matt. iv. 16.*
Ar yr hwn y gwelych yr Ysbryd yn diagyn ac yn aros arno. *John i. 33.*

Wedi dangos eisioes i ba amgylchiadau tosturus y dygwyd yr hen Frutaniaid iddynt. *Theo. Evans.*

816. Occasionally both the relative and antecedent are omitted in the same sentence.

Gwyn ei fyd a ystyria wrth y tlawd=gwyn ei fyd ef yr hwn, &c.

Additional examples. Gwae a adeilado dref trwy waed. *Hab. ii. 12.*
Oddi wrth a sylwid hawdd yw canfod. *Tegid.* Ac na bydded a drigo ynddi. *Acts i. 20.* A laddo a leddir. Bydded ganddynt awdurdod i wnaethur a fynant. *M. Kyffin.*

817. Possessive case. Clauses introduced by *whose*, or *of which* (e. g. *whose power is infinite*), will be expressed in Welsh

818. a.) By setting the relative pron. as the nom. of the clause, and placing the governing noun under the govern-

ment of the prep. *â*. [Order: relative, verb, prep. with its case.]

Yr hwn sydd â'i allu yn ei law = *who is with his power in his hand; whose power, &c.*

Y rhai sydd â'u sail mewn pridd. Job iv. 19.

Y rhai oedd â'u synwyrâu yn effro. Theo. Evans.

(a) "Whose name" is expressed by "*â'i enw*" = *with his name*.

819. β.) By placing the relative in an absolute state at the beginning of the clause, and making the governing noun the nom. to the verb^b. [Order: relative, verb, nom.,]

Y rhai y coffheir eu henwau = (as to) *whom, their names are mentioned; whose names, &c.*

Yr hwn y mae ei einioes ynddo. Gen. i. 30.

Yr hwn y mae ei wyntyll yn ei law.

820. γ.) By placing the governing noun first, and then the relative in a possessive state,—as in English. [Order: nom., possessive, verb.]

Dyma y bachgen, tad yr hwn a welais.

Diwedd y rhai yw distryw; duw y rhai yw eu bol.

Tad yr hwn a laddwyd yn y llofruddiaeth greulawn. Theo. Evans.

821. Negative particles. A clear distinction between the negatives *ni* and *na* is not observed in relative clauses. The following may be considered as general rules: (a) *Ni*, *nid* and *nis* follow *simple* relatives; (b) *Na*, *nad* and *nas* are used after *indefinite* relatives; and (c) in *simple* relative clauses when the relative heading is *omitted*.

a) Ger bron y Pab, yr hwn *ni* ddichon gamgymeryd. *M. Kyffin*.
Saif ei esgyrn allan, y rhai *ni* welid o'r blaen. Job xxxiii. 21.

b) Hawdd ei ddeall i'r sawl *nas* gallant hebgor llawer o amser. *R. I. Prys*.

c) Mewn llyfrau ereill *na* bu erioed ammbheuseth am danynt. *Edw. Samuel*.

Llawer o lyfrau historiau *nas* gwyddom pwy a'u hysgrifennodd. *Edw. Samuel*.

Cymmeryd gafael yng ngwaith pellenigyn *nad* oedd yn ymhoni mewn un ddawn ragorach. *W. Davies*.

ABSOLUTE CLAUSE.

822. The *case absolute* is expressed by the particle *a* before a consonant, or *ac* before a vowel, with a participle

^b A similar idiom is found in the Armorican language. See *Ed. Lhwyd's Arch. Brit.* p. 193.

of any tense. [Order: absolute particle, noun or pronoun, participle.]

Pres. and Past. Dyro i ni, *a nyni yn gofyn*. Com. Prayer.

Ac a hwy yn gwrandaw, efe a chwanegodd. Luke xiz. 11.

Pa ham, *a mi yn dysgwyl* iddi ddwyn grawnwin, y dug hi rawn gwylltion? Is. v. 4.

A'r Cymry yn cysgu, rhuthrai y gelyn am eu penau. Theo. Evans.

(a) The participle equivalent to "being" is omitted. *A mi yno*=I there; I being there. *A'r brenin yno*=the king there; the king being there.

Perfect Definite. *A mi wedi dyfod*, ymlawenbödd pawb.

Future. *A mi ar fedr ysgrifenu*, attaliodd fy llaw.

823. The absolute particle is sometimes left out,—especially if the conjunction *ac* (and) begins the sentence, and the noun or pron. of the absolute clause has a vowel for its initial letter. For instance, 'And He coming nigh, the multitude rejoiced,' would be expressed by '*Ac efe yn neshâu*, llawenhaodd y dyrfa,' not, '*Ac ac efe yn neshâu*,' &c.

APPOSITION CLAUSE. (See §§. 395—406; 486—488.)

SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF THE INITIAL MUTATIONS.

824. The consonants, that undergo a change or modification when standing as the initial letters in words, are the nine following: c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh.

825. These are divided into *three* classes, according to the modifications of which they are susceptible.

826. a.) c, p, t, form the *first* class, and have each *three* changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the *middle*, *nasal*, and *aspirate*.

827. b.) g, b, d, form the *second* class, and have each *two* changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the *middle* and the *nasal*. This class has no *aspirate* sound: hence the words that govern the *aspirate* of the first class govern the *radical* of the second*.

828. c.) ll, m, rh, form the *third* class, and have each *one* change or modification of the radical form; namely, the

* The words *ni*, *na*, and *oni* form an exception. These govern the *1st* class in the *aspirate*, the *2d* and *3d* in the *middle*. (See §. 855.)

middle. This class has no *nasal* and *aspirate* sounds: hence the words that govern the *nasal* of the first and second classes, and the *aspirate* of the first, govern the *radical* of the third class^d.

829. A table shewing the various modifications of mutable consonants.

		<i>Rad.</i>	<i>Mid.</i>	<i>Nasal.</i>	<i>Asp.</i>
1st Class.	C	Câr, a friend	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
	P	Pen, a head	Ben	Mhen	Phen
	T	Tâd, a father	Dâd	Nhâd	Thâd
2d Class.	G	Gw̄r, a husband	—w̄r	Ngw̄r	
	B	Brawd, a brother	Frawd	Mrawd	
	D	Dant, a tooth	Ddant	Nant	
3d Class.	Ll	Llaw, a hand	Law		
	M	Mam, a mother	Fam		
	Rh	Rhwyd, a net	Rwyd		

830. The mutable consonants are influenced by the words that *immediately precede* them; that is, a word beginning with one of the mutable consonants retains the *radical* sound, or is changed into the *middle*, the *nasal*, or the *aspirate*, according to the government of the word that *immediately precedes* it. Thus,

‘Ty ein tâd.’ Here *tâd* retains the *radical* form *t*, because *ein* governs the *radical* sound.

‘Ty dy dâd.’ Here *tâd* is changed into the *middle* form *dâd*, because *dy* governs the *middle*.

‘Ty fy nhâd.’ Here *tâd* is changed into the *nasal* form *nhâd*, because *fy* governs the *nasal*.

‘Ty ei thâd.’ Here *tâd* is changed into the *aspirate* form *thâd*, because *ei* governs the *aspirate*.

831. The remaining radical consonants (*chw*, *ff*, *h*, *n*, and *s*,) are *immutable*; that is, they have one, and only one, form under all circumstances; as ‘Ty ein nain; ty dy nain; ty fy nain; ty ei nain.

MIDDLE SOUND.

832. Nouns, adjectives, and pronouns.

^d See note c, p. 187.

833. The middle sound comes after common adjectives of the *positive* and superlative *degrees*. (See §§. 439, 441.)

Anwyl gyfaill.
Hoffus frawd.

Anwylaf gyfaill.
Hoffusaf frawd.

(a) Adjectives of the *equal* and *comparative* degree govern the *radical*. (§. 440.)

Cyn fwyned gwr.

Mwynach gwr.

834. *Feminine* nouns are changed into the *middle* after ordinal numbers. (§. 462.)

Y bummed bennod.

Y ddegfed ran.

(a) Nouns *masculine* retain the *radical* after the ordinals, except *ail*, which is followed by the *middle*.

Y pummed dydd.

Yr ail ddydd.

835. Cardinal numbers are in general followed by the *radical*; but *un, fem., dau, mas.,* and *dwyr, fem.* govern the *middle* sound. (§§. 458, 459.)

Pum' gwr. . Un dref. Dau ddyn. Dwy ddynes.

(a) *Un, fem.* followed by *ll* or *rh*, generally governs the *radical*;
as

Un llaw.

Un rhaw.

836. The indefinite pronouns govern the *middle* sound, except *dim, pob, llawer, un* and *yr un (mas.), rhai, sawl,* and *peth*, which govern the *radical*. (§. 192.)

Mid.

Ambell dro.
Amryw lyfrau.
Rhyw ddynion.

Rad.

Pob tro.
Rhai llyfrau.
Yr un dynion.

The interrogative *pa* governs the *middle*. Pa ddyn yw efe?

837. Adjectives and adverbs are put in the *middle* after *feminine nouns singular*. (§. 442.)

Gwraig ddoeth. Gwraig dra doeth. Y sefyllfa fwyaf blodeuog.

(a) The word *pobl*, though generally regarded as a pl. noun, is followed by the *middle* sound. Pobl dda.

838. Nouns in the possessive case, used adjectively, are put in the *middle* after *fem. nouns singular*. (§§. 384, 416.)

Y ddinas wagedd.

Torth geiniog.

Ysgubor goed.

839. Common nouns and adjectives, used as agnomens

after proper names of whatever gender, are put in the *middle* sound. (§§. 397, 444.)

Dafydd *frenin*.

Hywel *dda*.

Daniel *ddw*.

840. Nouns put in apposition to personal pronouns are generally put in the *middle*. (§. 487.)

Myfi *ddyn*.

Tydi *ferch*.

Erom ni *ddynion*.

Chwi *bechaduriaid*.

841. Some nouns and adjective pronouns denoting *number* and *quantity* are put in the *middle*, when the natural order is inverted. (§. 415.)

Dwfr *ddigon*.

Rhyfeddodau *lawer*.

842. The article *y* governs a *fem. noun sing.* or its accompaniments, in the *middle* sound. (§. 375.)

Y *ddynes*.

Y *ddoeth ddynes*.

Y *dra doeth ddynes*.

(a) *Dau*, though *mas.*, *pobl* and *pobloedd*, though plural, are softened after *y*. Y *ddau ddyn*. Y *bobl hyn*. Y *bobloedd hyn*.

(b) *Fem. nouns sing.* beginning with *ll* or *rh*, generally retain the *rad.* after *y*. (§. 376.)

Y *llong*.

Y *lleuad*.

Y *rhaw*.

Y *rheol*.

843. The pronouns *dy*, *yth*, and *ei masculine*, are followed by the *middle* sound. (§. 498.)

Dy *dad*. Ti *a'th dad*. Ei *dad*.

(x) But *ei mas.*, and *ei fem.*, followed by *finite verbs*, govern the *radical* sound. (§. 501.)

Efe *a'i* (= *a ei*) *cosbodd ef*. Efe *a'i* *cosbodd hi*.

Verbs.

844. *Finite verbs* govern their object in the *middle* sound. (§§. 442, 548.)

Darllenais *lyfr*. Dymunodd *fyned*.

(a) *Infin. verbs* govern the *radical*. (§§. 421, 548.)

Darllen *llyfr*. Dymuno *myned*.

845. The verb *oes* is often followed by its subject in the *middle* sound. (§. 457, b.)

Nid *oes dwyll ynddo*.

846. The pron. *mi*, *ti*, and their compounds assume the *middle* when they follow their verbs. (§. 467, 471.)

Caraf *fi*; oeri *di*; Cerir *fi*.

847. The pronoun *ti* and its compounds are put in the *middle* after the Infinitive.

Y mae efe yn dy garu *di*. Y mae hwn yn dy gashâu *dithau*.

848. A Transitive clause has the initial consonant of the Infin. sometimes put in the *middle*. (§§. 550, 551.)

Y mae yn dweyd *f*yned o hono i'r dref.

849. The Infin. is put in the *middle*, when its subject is governed by a preposition.

Gofynais i'r *d*yn ddyfod. Y mae yn gofyn *i*ddo ef ddyfod.

850. Intervenant phrase.

If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an intervenient word or phrase, the subject or the object will be put in the *middle* sound. (§. 552.)

Y mae ym Mhrydain *f*renines ddoeth.

Yr oedd yno *d*dynion dewr.

Cymmeryd gyd ag ef fantell *g*yssegredig y swyddogaeth. *Brutus*.

851. Prepositions. The following prepositions govern the *middle* sound. *Am*, *ar*, *at*, *gan*, *heb*, *hyd*, *i*, *o*, *tan*, *tros*, *trwy*, *wrth*. (§. 340.)

Ar ben. At ddyn. Gan ddyn.

(a) The participial signs *gan*, *dan*, and *ar* are here included.

Gan ddysgu; dan ddysgu; ar ddysgu.

The participial signs *yn*, *wedi*, *ar ol*, and *ar fedr*, govern the *radical*. Yn dysgu; wedi dysgu.

852. The *middle* sound comes after compound prepositions ending with one of the preceding simple prepositions. (§. 348.)

Oddi ar fryn. Oddi wrth frawd.

853. Adverbs and conjunctions.

Verbs are put in the *middle* when immediately preceded by their qualifying adverbs.

Awyddus *d*dysgwyliai. Yr oedd yn peraid *d*gannu.

854. Adjectives are put in the *middle* after the adverbs of comparison,—*Cyn, go, lled, mor, pur, rhy.* (§. 667.)

Go *ddysgedig.* Cyn *ddysgediged.*

(a) But *tra* governs the first class in the *aspirate*; the second and third in the *rad.* *Digon* governs the *radical.* *Cyn, mor,* and *pur* may be followed by the *middle* or *radical* of *ll* and *rh.*

Tra chas; tra gwyn &c. *Digon cas; digon gwyn.*
Cyn *lloned* or *loned.* Pur *llon* or *lon.*

855. *Ni*, not; *na*, Imper. not; that...not; *ai ni*, is not; *oni*, is not; unless, until; govern the *middle* sound of the second and third classes, and the *aspirate* of the first.

Ni ddysga. *Ni châr.* (§. 639.)

Na ddysga. *Na châr.* (§. 641.)

Amlwg yw na ddysga, ac na châr.

Ai ni, or oni ddysga, ac oni châr?

Oni ddysga, ac oni châr.

856. The expletive * and the interrogative *a*, and the disjunctive *neu*, govern the *middle.* (§§. 658, 680, 772.)

Duw a ddwywedodd. *A ddwywedodd efe?* *Dyn neu ddynes.*

857. 'Yn apposition' and 'yn adverbial' govern the *middle* sound. (§. 687.)

Dafydd sydd yn frenin. *Ysgrifena yn gampus.*

(a) 'Yn apposition' and 'yn adverbial' generally govern *ll* and *rh* in the *radical* sound. *Yn rheol; yn llawen.*

858. The conjunctions *am, gan, pan, er pan,* and *tan,* govern the *middle.*

Am ddwyfod o hono. *Pan ddaw.* *Tan ddaw.*

859. Interjections. Nouns or their concomitants assume the *middle* sound after interjections, expressed or omitted. (§§. 701, 702.)

O Dduw. *Ha fab.* *Barchedig syr.*

Dacw' ddyn. *Dyna geffyl.*

(a) The *radical* form is sometimes retained, if the interjection is omitted. *Duw dad.*

* The obsolete expletive *yd* governs the *middle.* *Basaf dwfr man yd lefair.*

† *Dacw, dyna, &c.* are by some classed under Adverbs.

860. Governing words omitted.

a. When the expletive *a* is omitted, the verb is still put in the *middle* sound. (§. 659.)

Pwy laddodd y oi?=*prwy a laddodd?*
 Arthur fydd yn frenin=*a fydd.*
 Fe gosbir Arthur=*fe a gosbir.*

861. β. When '*yn apposition*' is omitted, the apposition word, if coming after the verb, still assumes the *middle* sound. (§. 614.)

Arthur sydd frenin=*Arthur sydd yn frenin.*
 Efe oedd ganwyll yn llosgi=*yn ganwyll.*

(a) Should the apposition word precede the verb, it resumes its *radical* form. *Dysgedig y cyfrifir* Arthur=*yn ddysgedig.*

(b) Sometimes the apposition word is put in the *radical*, even when it follows the verb. (§. 614.)

I'r dyn a fyddo *da.*

862. γ. When adverbs of quality (e. g. *llefaru yn ddoeth*) begin the sentence, *yn* is thrown off, and the next word resumes its *radical* initial.

Doeth y lleferaist=*yn ddoeth.*

863. δ. Words denoting *duration* and *point of time*, *distance of place*, and *measure*, retain their *radical* initials if they stand foremost in sentences; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonants are changed into the *middle*. (§. 426.)

Deng wythnos yr arosais. *Arosais ddeng wythnos.*

NASAL SOUND.

864. '*Yn preposition*,' and the pronoun *fy* govern the *nasal* sound.

Yn nhir Cymru. *Ym Merwyn.* *Yn Nghorwen.*
Fy nhad. *Fy mrawd.* *Fy nghariad.*

Synoptical view of the different governments of *yn*.

Yn participial governs the *radical*. *Arthur sydd yn teyrnasu.*

Yn apposition *middle*. *Arthur sydd yn frenin.*

Yn adverbial *middle*. *Arthur sydd yn rhyfela yn dda.*

Yn preposition *nasal*. *Yn nhir* Cymru.

865. The *nasal* sound comes after some of the cardinal numbers. (§. 459. *d.*)

Saith niwrnod. Pum' mlynedd.

ASPIRATE SOUND.

866. *Ni*, not; *na*, imper. not; that . . not; *ai ni*, is not; *oni*, is not, unless, until; govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class, and the *middle* of the 2d and 3d classes.

Ni *char.* Na *char.* Amlwg yw na *char.*
Ni *ddarllen.* Na *ddarllen.* Amlwg yw na *ddarllen.*

867. The prepositions *â*, *gyda*, and *efo*, with; *tua*, towards; *tra*, beyond, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class and *radical* of the 2d and 3d.

Lladd â *chleddyf.* Gyda *chleddyf.* Taraw â *bys.*

868. The conjunctions *a*, and, as; *na*, nor, than; the obsolete *no*, than; and *o*, if, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st and *radical* of the 2d and 3d.

Bara *a chaws.* Cystal *a thi.*
Bara *a gwin.* Gwell *na byyd.*

869. The numerals *tri* and *chwe*^s, and the pronoun *ei* *feminine*, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and *radical* of the 2d and 3d classes. (§§. 458, *c*, 500.)

Tri chosyn. *Chwe' chosyn.* *Ei chosyn.*
Tri gwr. *Chwe' gwr.* *Ei gwr.*

870. **Vowels aspirated.** Vowel initials take the aspirate *h* before them after the pronouns *ym*, *ei* *feminine*, *ein*, and *eu*. (§. 502.)

Myfi a'm *h*awen. Ei *h*awen.

^s *Chwech*, of which *chwe'* is a contraction, governs the *radical* sound of all classes. *Chwech cosyn.*

871. *Ei masculine* is followed by the aspirate *h*, if the following word be a *finite* verb.

Arthur a'i (=a ei) *h*andwyodd ef.

Pan y'i (=y ei) *h*andwyir.

872. The numeral *ugain* is frequently aspirated after the preposition *ar* ; as

Un *ar hugain*. Dau *ar hugain*.

FINIS.



QUESTIONS GIVEN TO THE CANDIDATES

FOR THE

"POWIS EXHIBITION,"

IN 1848.

1. Welsh vocables for the following English words:—
1. Reason. 2. Understanding. 3. Intellectual powers.
4. Virtue. 5. Honour. 6. Moral feelings.

2. English vocables for the following Welsh words:—
1. Amynedd. 2. Gwladgarwch. 3. Pwyll. 4. Diddig-
rwydd. 5. Diwygiad. 6. Rhagwybodaeth. 7. Rhag-
luniad. 8. Rhagflaeniad.

3. Give the various forms which the English verb
"is" takes in the Welsh language, and state the differ-
ent ways in which these forms may be used.

4. Give the Welsh forms of the Substantive verb
"wyf," "I am," in all the tenses of the Indicative mood.

5. Give the same forms of the verb "credaf."

6. Give the same forms of the verb of which the
participle is "yn canfod."

7. Show the manner in which the last verb exem-
plifies, more than the regular verb, the great fact, that
the verb in all languages is compounded of a certain
root, and of parts of the substantive verb.

8. Take the words "Calon," a heart, "Pen," a head,
"Dydd," day, "Gair," a word, "Bôn," a stem, "Tîr,"
land, "Gwir," truth, "Ffordd," a road, "Mam," a mother,
"Wy," an egg, and show their mutations when preceded
by the possessive pronouns "fy," my, "dy," thine, "ei,"
both his and her, and "eu," their.

9. Give the various forms of the numbers two, three,
and four, and the principle on which they take a
different form.

10. State the rules for using "Os," if, and "Pe," if,
in the Welsh language.

11. Also, the true use of "Nid," not, and "Na," not.

12. Conjoin "Caib and Pâl" in Welsh, "Dwr and Tân," "Pant and Cwm;" conjoin them also in the plural, putting "Pâl, Tân, and Cwm" first. Disjoin, with the double "Na," "Cynffon and Corn;" also, in the plural, putting "Corn" first.

13. Give the Welsh forms of the Latin phrases:—
"Vir doctus—aurum coctum—amnis brevis—terra lata
—mel et lac—mala (apples) mellea.—Vir discet, vir
didicit."

QUESTIONS GIVEN TO THE CANDIDATES

FOR THE

"POWIS EXHIBITION,"

IN 1852.

1. Give the laws of the changes of initial consonants.
2. Enumerate the adjectives that take a plural form to agree with substantives.
3. Wherein do Welsh numerals differ from the English ones?—and give the reason of the peculiarity of the former.
4. The verb "canu" in its different tenses, moods, and voices.
5. The law of accentuation.
6. How do Welsh substantives form their plurals?—Give instances.
7. Give the terminations of derivative adjectives and their force, with instances to prove your assertion.
8. State the syntax of adjectives, and the exceptions.
9. Marked agreements, or differences, between Welsh idioms and those in Greek and Latin.
10. Give the derivations and historical associations of the following words;—viz. llong, plygu, gwydr, bara, haul, seren, syr, dydd-iau, melldith, gwydd, pasc, pastwn, pori, gwae, Prydain, Cymru.

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

Andrews, Rev. Evan, M.A. Llanfrothen.

Anwyl, R. H. Esq. Bala.

Asaph, St. the Lord Bishop of, 12 copies.

Bangor, the Lord Bishop of, 3 copies.

Bangor, the Very Rev. the Dean of.

Barnwell, Rev. E. L. M.A. Head Master of Ruthin School.

Beever, Frederick, Esq. Second Master of Cowbridge School.

Beever, Rev. W. Holt, M.A. Head Master of Cowbridge School.

Berrington, Mrs. Woodland, Swansea.

Bertram, Robert, Esq. Oxford.

Briscoe, Rev. Richard, D.D. Whitford, Fellow of Jesus Coll. Oxford.

Briscoe, Rev. Thomas, B.D. Vice-Principal and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford, 5 copies.

Briscoe, Rev. William, M.A. Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford.

Brown, Rev. Thomas, M.A. Llanferres.

Chambers, Edward John, Esq. Brecon.

Chambres, Rev. Charles, M.A. Dwygyfylchi, 2 copies.

Clarke, Rev. J. T. B.A. Llandeilo Talybont.

Cleaver, Rev. William, M.A. Leamington, 6 copies.

Clough, the Venerable Archdeacon, Mold.

David's, St. the Lord Bishop of, 2 copies.

Davies, Rev. David, Castle Careinion.

Davies, Mr. Evan, Bala.

Davies, Rev. John, M.A. Cyffylliog.

Davies, Rev. Morgan, M.A. Llanrwst, Examining Chaplain to the Lord Bishop of St. Asaph, 2 copies.

Davies, Rev. Morgan, M.A. Cunnah's Quay, 2 copies.

Davies, Mr. Timothy D. Llantrisant, Glamorganshire.

Davies, Rev. Thomas, Llandderfel.

Davies, Rev. William, B.A. Wrexham.

Davies, Mr. William, Glan y mor, Llanelly.

Davies, Rev. William, Llanwunno, Glamorganshire.

Dyke, Rev. William, B.D. Fellow and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford.

Earle, Rev. John, M.A. Fellow and Tutor of Oriol College, Professor of Anglo-Saxon, Oxford, 2 copies.

Edwards, Rev. Christopher, B.A. Llanfechell.

- Edwards, E. Wood, Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Edwards, Rev. Griffith, M.A. Minera
 Edwards, W. J. Esq. Jesus College, Oxford, Powis' Exhibitioner.
 Evans, Rev. D. Meifod.
 Evans, Rev. D. Silvan, Llangian.
 Evans, Rev. D. Evan, (*Glan Geirionydd*.)
 Evans, Rev. J. Welsh Church, London.
 Evans, W. Howell, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford, 3 copies.
 Eyton, Rev. Robert Wynne, M.A. Northop.

 Foulkes, Rev. Henry, D.D. Principal of Jesus College, Oxford.
 Foulkes, Rev. Edmund S. B.D. Fellow and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford.

 George, Rev. T. P. Bridell, Cardigan.
 Gilbertson, Isaac, Esq. Bala, 12 copies.
 Gilbertson, Rev. Lewis, B.D. Fellow and Junior Bursar of Jesus College, Oxford.
 Gittins, Mr. Edward, Rhosygwaliau.
 Griffith, Rev. G. Conwil.
 Griffith, George, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Griffith, Rev. J. Llangunnor, Examining Chaplain to the Lord Bishop of St. David's.
 Griffith, R. W. Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Griffiths, Rev. Joseph W. B.A. Llandudno.
 Griffiths, Rev. Thomas, M.A. Llanfor.
 Griffiths, Rev. Walter, Resolven.
 Griffiths, Mr. Robert, Llanfor, Bala.
 Gronw, William, Esq. (*Goronwi hil Gwereinion*.)
 Gwyn, J. Bevan, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.

 Hall, Lady, Llanover, 2 copies.
 Harries, Rev. Gilbert, M.A. Brecon.
 Heaton, Rev. Charles W. B.D. Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford, 3 copies.
 Henney, Rev. T. F. M.A. Fellow and Tutor of Pembroke College, Oxford, and Examining Chaplain to the Lord Bishop of Lincoln.
 Herbert, D. W. Esq. Llansantffraid, Cardiganshire.
 Holmes, James, Esq. Battersea.
 Howell, R. W. Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Hughes, Mr. David, Bala.
 Hughes, Rev. Edward, M.A. Meliden.
 Hughes, Rev. James, M.A. Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford.
 Hughes, Rev. Joshua, Llandovery.
 Hughes, Mr. J. Clerk, Merthyr Tydfil.
 Hughes, Rev. Morgan, M.A. Corwen, Rural Dean.
 Hughes, Nathaniel, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Hughes, Rev. Reginald, B.A. Second Master of Ruthin School.
 Hughes, Mr. R.
 Hughes, Mr. R. P. Bala.

Hughes, Rev. T. J. M.A. Northop.
 Hughes, T. McKinney, Esq. Llandovery.
 Hughes, W. E. Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Humphreys, Mr. George, Bala.

James, W. E. Esq. B.A. Vice-Principal of the Training Institution,
 Carmarthen.

Jenkins, Evan, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Jesus College, Oxford, Library of, 2 copies.
 Johnes, Arthur J. Esq. County Court Judge, 2 copies.
 Jones, Mr. Griffith, Llandrillo.
 Jones, Rev. Daniel L. M.A. Gwyddelwern.
 Jones, Rev. Edward, M.A. Llanrhaidr, 2 copies.
 Jones, Mr. Erasmus, Corwen.
 Jones, Mr. E. Bala.
 Jones, Rev. E. Rhesycae.
 Jones, Henry, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Jones, Mr. Joseph, Llanfor.
 Jones, Rev. J. R. Kilsby.
 Jones, Rev. Edward, M.A. Gwaenysgor.
 Jones, Rev. Griffith Arthur, B.A. Gwalchmai.
 Jones, Mr. Griffith, Bala.
 Jones, Rev. James, Llanfair.
 Jones, John, Esq. Banker, Bala.
 Jones, Rev. John, B.A. Llangar.
 Jones, Rev. John, Llandderfel.
 Jones, John Skinner, Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Jones, Rev. Michael, Bala.
 Jones, Rev. M. D. Bwlchnewydd, Carmarthen, 8 copies.
 Jones, Rev. Owen, B.A. Casgob.
 Jones, Mr. Owen Wynne, (*Gwyndaf Hen*), Clynog.
 Jones, Mr. R. E. Bala.
 Jones, Robert Owen, Esq. Bala.
 Jones, Mr. Roderic, Llansantffraid.
 Jones, Mr. Simon, Bala.
 Jones, Mr. Thomas, Bala.
 Jones, Mr. Thomas, Bala.
 Jones, William, Esq. (*Gwrgant*).
 Jones, W. Eccles, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Jones, Rev. W. Tredegar.
 Jones, Rev. W. Hartwell, M.A. Llanddow.
 Jones, William Owen, Esq. Bala.

Killin, Rev. R. M.A. Festiniog.
 Kirkham, Rev. J. W. M.A. Llanbrynmair.

Llandaff, the Lord Bishop of.
 Lawrence, H. Esq. M.D. Carmarthen.
 Lewellin, David, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Lewis, Rev. W. Hancock, B.A. Master of the Grammar School,
 Bala.

- Lhwyd, Rev. R. Watkin.
 Lhwyd, Angharad, Ty yn y Rhyl.
 Lloyd, Mr. David, Bala.
 Lloyd, Edward, Esq. Rhagat.
 Lloyd, G. P. Esq. Bala, 2 copies.
 Lloyd, Rev. Maurice Hedd, M.A. Goodnestone.
- Macphail, E. W. St. Mawr, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Mainwaring, Townshend, Esq. Galtfaenan.
 McIntosh, Rev. J. Llanwyddelan, Newtown.
 Morgan, Rev. Hugh, M.A. Denbigh.
 Morgan, John, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Morgan, Mr. William, Finsbury Place South, London, 2 copies.
 Morgan, W. Taylor, Esq. Carnarvon.
 Morice, Rev. Thomas, B.A. Fellow and Librarian of Jesus College, Oxford.
 Morice, W. Hallen, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Mortimer, T. G. Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford.
- Newcome, Ven. Archdeacon, Llanrhaiadr.
- Owen, Rev. Brisco, B.D. Remenham, Berks.
 Owen, Mr. David, (*Brutus*), 6 copies.
 Owen, Rev. Edward, M.A. Fellow and Latin Lecturer of Jesus College, Oxford.
 Owen, Rev. John, B.A. Llanrhos.
 Owen, Rev. Hugh, B.A. Llanerchymedd.
 Owen, Rev. R. B.D. Fellow and Dean of Jesus College, Oxford.
- Parry, Rev. David, B.A. Nerquis.
 Parry, Rev. D. Llywell, Rural Dean.
 Parry, Rev. H. M.A. Llanasa, Canon of St. Asaph, 3 copies.
 Powell, E. P. Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Powis, the Earl of.
 Price, Rev. John, B.A. Dolgelly.
 Price, H. T. Esq. M.A. Cheltenham College.
 Price, R. W. Esq. Rhiwlas, 10 copies.
 Price, Mrs. Rhiwlas.
 Prys, Mr. R. J. (*Gwerydd ap Rhys*).
 Pughe, Rev. R. M.A. Bala, 2 copies.
- Richards, Rev. Richard, Meifod.
 Richards, Rev. Thomas, Llangyniew.
 Richardson, Henry, Esq. B.A. Aberhirnant, 2 copies.
 Richardson, Rev. Thomas, M.A. Fishguard.
 Richardson, William, Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Roberts, A. Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.
 Roberts, Rev. David, Mostyn.
 Roberts, Mr. Moses, Bala.
 Roberts, W. R. Esq. B.A. St. Mary Hall, Oxford.
 Roberts, Rev. T. Llanuwchllyn, 3 copies.

Rowlands, Thomas, Esq. Tŷnant, Bala.

Saunderson, Mr. R. Bala, 12 copies.

Spence, James, Esq. Gyrn Castle.

Spurrel, Mr. Printer, Carmarthen.

Stubbs, A. M. Esq. Banker, Bala.

Thomas, Rev. A. Bugeildy.

Thomas, D. R. Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.

Thomas, Thomas, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.

Thomas, Rev. T. B.A. Carnarvon.

Thomson, Rev. William, M.A. Llanfechan, 5 copies.

Trevor, Rev. W. J. M.A. Chancellor of Bangor, 2 copies

Turner, J. Esq. B.A. St. John's College, Cambridge.

Vincent, Rev. James Crawley, B.A. Llantrisant.

Walker, Edward, Esq. Solicitor, Dolgelley.

Watkins, Mr. Aberystwyth.

White, Rev. H. W. M.A. Dolgelley.

White, Messrs. Booksellers, Carmarthen, 6 copies.

Williams, Rev. Charles, B.D. Holyhead, 4 copies.

Williams, Rev. D. Archer, Carmarthen.

Williams, Rev. G. G. Llanfynydd, Carmarthen.

Williams, Rev. Hugh, M.A. Chancellor of Llandaff, 2 copies.

Williams, Hugh, Esq. Bassalleg, Monmouthshire.

Williams, Ignatius, Esq. Jesus College, Oxford.

Williams, Rev. John, M.A. (*Ab Ithel*.)

Williams, Rev. John, B.A. Llandrindod, Bala, 4 copies.

Williams, Rev. Morris, M.A. (*Nicander*), Amlwch.

Williams, Rev. Robert, M.A. Rhyd y croesau.

Williams, Rev. Rowland, M.A. Ysgeifiog, Canon of St. Asaph.

Williams, Rev. Rowland, B.D. Vice-Principal of St. David's College, Lampeter.

Williams, Rev. Robert, B.A. Llanfaes.

Williams, Stephen, Esq. B.A. Jesus College, Oxford

Williams, Mr. Thomas, Colwyn.

Williams, William, Esq. Solicitor, Bala.

Wood, Mr. Corwen.

Wynne, Rev. John, M.A. Llandrillo, 6 copies





